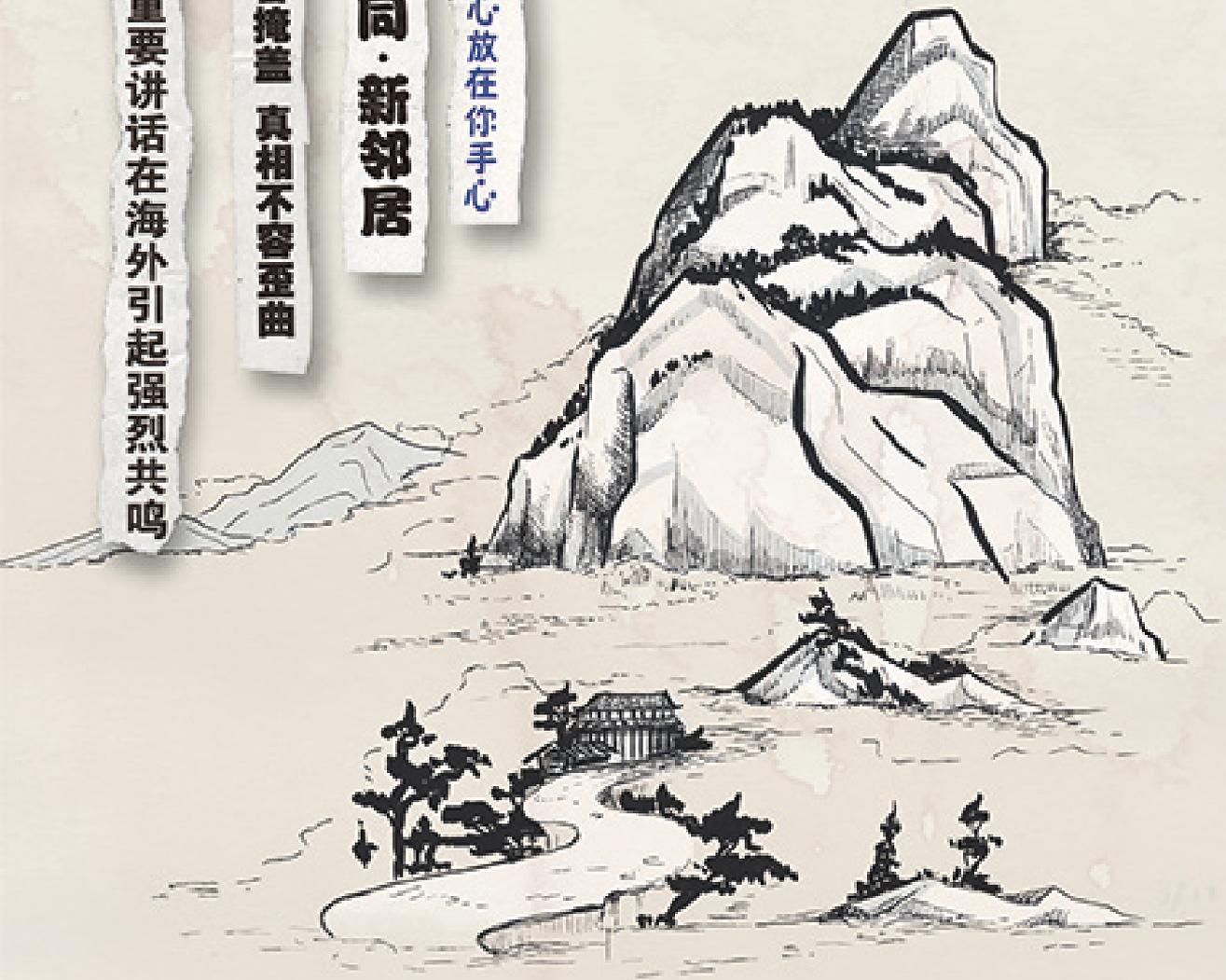


将我的真心放在你手心

老胡同·新邻居

罪行不容掩盖 真相不容歪曲

习近平重要讲话在海外引起强烈共鸣



Jyrki Kallio

TOWARDS CHINA'S STRATEGIC NARRATIVE

On the construction of the historico-cultural roots of China's national identity in the light of the Chinese debate relating to the rise of traditional schools of thought

Jyrki Kallio

Towards China's Strategic Narrative

On the construction of the historico-cultural roots of China's national identity
in the light of the Chinese debate
relating to the rise of traditional schools of thought

Academic dissertation
to be publicly defended with the permission
of the Faculty of Law at the University of Lapland
in Castrén hall on 25 November 2016 at 12 noon



LAPIN YLIOPISTO
UNIVERSITY OF LAPLAND

ROVANIEMI 2016

Jyrki Kallio

Towards China's Strategic Narrative

On the construction of the historico-cultural roots of China's national identity
in the light of the Chinese debate
relating to the rise of traditional schools of thought



LAPIN YLIOPISTO
UNIVERSITY OF LAPLAND

ROVANIEMI 2016

University of Lapland
Faculty of Law

Cover:

Miia Anttila

Sales:

Lapland University Press / LUP

P.O. Box 8123

FI-96101 Rovaniemi

Finland

tel. 040 821 4242

publication@ulapland.fi

www.ulapland.fi/LUP

University of Lapland Printing Centre, Rovaniemi 2016

Printed:

Acta Universitatis Lapponiensis 339

ISBN 978-952-484-936-4

ISSN 0788-7604

Pdf:

Acta electronica Universitatis Lapponiensis 207

ISBN 978-952-484-937-1

ISSN 1796-6310

Summary in Finnish

Kiinan kansallidentiteetin historiallis-kulttuuriset juuret ja väittely perinteisten oppisuuntien elvyttämisestä

Tämä väitöskirjatutkimus tarkastelee Kiinan poliittisen johdon pyrkimystä luoda maalleen uusi strateginen narratiivi, joka kuvaa maan nousua johtavaksi mutta rauhanomaiseksi suurvallaksi. Strategista narratiivia tarvitaan kertomaan sekä kiinalaisille että muulle maailmalle, minne Kiina on matkalla, miten sinne aiotaan päästä, ja millainen onnellinen loppu tavoitteessa odottaa. Olennainen osa narratiivia on kiinalaisuuden määrittely. Siihen liittyy ”kansallisen opin” esiinnoisuus eli se, miten Kiinan perinteisten oppisuuntien arvoja on ryhdytty valikoiden esittämään kiinalaisuuden ytimenä.

Tämä tutkimus muodostuu neljästä julkaistusta, vertaisarvioidusta artikkelista tai kirjan luvusta sekä kokoomaraportista. Ne tarkastelevat eri puolilta samaa kysymystä: mikä rooli ”kansallisella opilla” on niiden narratiivien muokkaamisessa, joita Kiinan johto käyttää asemansa legitimoimiseksi ja perustellakseen maansa kasvavaa vaikutusvaltaa maailmassa? Kysymyksen sisältämän prosessin kuvaaminen auttaa ymmärtämään, miten Kiinan kansallinen identiteetti on muuttumassa. Kiinan perinteisten oppisuuntien edustamien arvojen tulkinnat heijastuvat niin Kiinan sisäiseen kehitykseen kuin sen ulkopoliittikkaan.

Tutkimus osoittaa, että Kiinan johto käyttää puheenvuoroissaan lainauksia klassisista teksteistä instrumentaalisesti eli korostaa vain niitä perinteisten oppisuuntien arvoja, jotka palvelevat sen etuja. Tällaisiin arvoihin lukeutuu muun muassa kungfutselaisuuden korostama kuuliaisuus esivaltaa kohtaan. Tutkimus kyseenalaistaa lisäksi kansallisen identiteetin muokkaamisen apuna käytetyn historiallisen narratiivin totuudenmukaisuuden. Tutkimuksen johtopäätelmä on, että vaikka Kiinan johto sanoo pitävänsä perinteisiä oppisuuntia suurella arvolla, se ei ole valmis muuttamaan kommunistisen puolueen doktriinia millään ratkaisevalla tavalla.

Kiinalaisuuden ytimen määrittämisen lisäksi uuden strategisen narratiivin tulee vahvistaa puoluejohdon asemaa Kiinan kansallisen yhtenäisyyden ja kunnian puolustajina. Kiinan historiallisen narratiivin mukaan maa kärsii edelleen siirtomaavaltujen keisarikauden aikaisten toimien seurauksista. Kiinan uusimman iskulauseen, ”Kiinan unelman” toteutumisen sanotaan tarkoittavan kansallista uudelleenheräämistä eli lopullista irtipääsyä menneisyyden nöyryytyksistä. Tämä vaikuttaa Kiinan ulkopoliittikkaan. Kiinan taloudellinen nousu on herättänyt odotukset maan aseman vahvistumisesta poliittisesti ja sotilaallisesti. Yhteiskuntatieteellisissä piireissä Kiinassa on nostettu esiin ajatus, että ”kansallisen opin” pitäisi vaikuttaa jopa kansainvälisen politiikan teoriaan ja tuoda siihen kiinalainen ulottuvuus.

Tutkimus käsittelee ensisijaisesti perinteisten oppisuuntien instrumentalisoinnin vaikutusta Kiinan ulkopoliittikkaan. Strategista narratiivia luodaan Kiinan johdon aatteelliseksi työkaluksi, jonka avulla on mahdollista haastaa länsimaiden johtoasema ja

muuttaa lopulta koko vallitseva maailmanjärjestys Kiinalle suotuisemmaksi. Tutkimus esittää, että vaikka kiinalaista kansainvälisen politiikan teoriaa ei olekaan vielä syntynyt, perinteisten oppien mukainen maailmankatsomus näkyy jo puoluejohdon retorikassa. Siinä korostuvat historiasta ja perinteestä kumpuavat ”kiinalaiset erityispiirteet”, joiden nojalla voidaan kyseenalaistaa arvojen yleismaailmallisuus ja kansainvälisen järjestelmän länsikeskeisyys.

Tutkimus pitää mahdollisena, että ylhäältä johdettu perinteen kunnianpalautus voi johtaa uuden ”sisäsyntyisen” arvojärjestelmän muodostumiseen, mikä voi heijastua kaikkialle kiinalaiseen yhteiskuntaan, esimerkiksi oikeuskulttuuriin. Ilman historiallisten ja kulttuuristen prosessien tuntemusta on mahdotonta ymmärtää ja tulkita Kiinan yhteiskunnan ja politiikan kehityskulkuja.

Acknowledgements

I gratefully acknowledge the generous assistance and valuable guidance of Professor Matti Nojonen, my supervisor; Professor Torbjörn Lodén and Professor Dr Ralph Weber, the examiners of my dissertation; Dr Teija Tiilikainen, Director of the Finnish Institute of International Affairs; Dr Mika Aaltola, Director of the Global Security research programme at the Finnish Institute of International Affairs; Ms Lynn Nikkanen, my language editor; and of course Ms Marita Siika, my mentor in all things Chinese. I also extend my warm gratitude to my family, friends and colleagues for their continuous support and encouragement.

List of original publications

- Kallio, Jyrki. 2011. *Tradition in Chinese Politics. The Party-state's reinvention of the past and the critical response from public intellectuals*. FIIA Report 27, 2011. Helsinki: The Finnish Institute of International Affairs. 147 pages. Available electronically at http://www.fia.fi/en/publication/165/tradition_in_chinese_politics/. Published with the permission of the Finnish Institute of International Affairs.
- Kallio, Jyrki. 2015a. "Toward a Harmonious World? Emerging Thinking on a Chinese International Relations Model". In *New Trends and Challenges in China's Foreign Policy*. Edited by Joseph Y.S. Cheng & Marita Siika. Hong Kong 2015: Contemporary China Research Project/City University of Hong Kong. Pp. 87–113. Published with the permission of Contemporary China Research Project.
- Kallio, Jyrki. 2015b. "Dreaming of the Great Rejuvenation of the Chinese Nation". *Fudan Journal of Humanities and Social Sciences*. Vol. 8, Issue 4 (2015). Pp. 521–532. Available electronically at DOI: 10.1007/s40647-015-0097-4. With permission of Springer. © Fudan University 2015.
- Kallio, Jyrki. 2015c. "Carving Out a Role for a Confucian China on the World Stage". In *Contemporary East Asia and the Revival of Confucianism*. Edited by Jana Rošker & Nataša Visočnik. Newcastle-upon-Tyne 2015: Cambridge Scholars Publishing. Pp. 75–97. Published with the permission of Cambridge Scholars Publishing.

Table of contents

SUMMARIZING REPORT

1 Introduction	17
1.1 Background.....	17
1.2 Objectives and scope.....	18
1.3 Methodological and theoretical considerations	21
1.4 Dissertation structure.....	27
2 Research contribution	29
2.1 Tradition in Chinese politics.....	29
2.2 Towards a harmonious world?.....	30
2.3 Dreaming of the great rejuvenation of the Chinese nation.....	31
2.4 Carving out a role for a Confucian China on the world stage.....	33
3 Results summary	35
3.1 The communist core values and the six new virtues	35
3.2 China's world view and the <i>Tianxia</i> ideal	36
3.3 Utilitarian justice and pragmatic interests.....	38
4 Discussion	40
4.1 General implications.....	40
4.2 The revival of tradition and auto-Orientalization	43
4.3 Relevance to the rule of law in China.....	44
4.4 Towards China's strategic narrative	47
5 Summary	50
6 Figures	52
6.1 The formation of China's national/historical narrative and the Communist Party's narrative	52
6.2 The formation of China's strategic narrative.....	53
7 References	54

ORIGINAL PUBLICATIONS

Tradition in Chinese Politics: The Party-state's reinvention of the past and the critical response from public intellectuals (Kallio 2011)	61
Introduction	62
Chapter I Historical myths behind Chinese nationalism	71
Introduction to Chapter I	71
The Chinese creed	73
Finding "China Proper"	78
A case in point: The Taiwan issue	84
Defining "Chinese" through the others	86
Unity versus pluralism	95
Chapter II The revival of tradition	102
Introduction to Chapter II	102
The failure of the revolutionaries to uproot Confucianism	104
The project for replacing Confucianism with Traditional Learning	111
A Harmonious Society	116
A case in point: The Zhonghua Culture Symbolic City	121
Saving the Nation with political religion	125
Chapter III Confucianism old and new	130
Introduction to Chapter III	130
What is Confucianism?	132
Confucianism in the late imperial era	138
The emergence of New Confucianism	145
The third and fourth generation New Confucians in Mainland China	154
The early lineage of Confucianism	160
A case in point: Reinterpretations of Confucius	163
Chapter IV Conclusions	170
Confucianism in contemporary China	170
Concluding conclusions	180
Glossary of Chinese terms	185
List of tables and figures	191
Sources	192
Toward a Harmonious World? Emerging Thinking on a Chinese International Relations Model (Kallio 2015a)	203
1 Introduction	203
2 China's foreign policy orientation	207
3 The demand for a Chinese international relations theory	212
4 China's traditional foreign relations	215
5 Confucian foreign relations	218
6 Concluding remarks	227

Dreaming of the Great Rejuvenation of the Chinese Nation (Kallio 2015b)	231
1 Introduction.....	231
2 China’s traditional world view and the Chinese Dream	233
2.1 Traditional culture as China’s most profound form of soft power.....	233
2.2 The Tianxia system.....	233
2.3 The Kingly Way.....	235
3 Is China preparing to challenge the international order?.....	236
3.1 Harboring secret ambitions or biding one’s time.....	236
3.2 The opportune time.....	237
3.3 Martial spirit.....	238
4 Conclusions	239
References	240
Carving Out a Role for a Confucian China on the World Stage (Kallio 2015c)	243
Introduction	243
Rising above Confucian hermeneutics.....	248
Xi Jinping’s “rule by virtue”	254
The Confucian response	258
Bibliography.....	261

Summarizing report

1 Introduction

1.1 Background

This doctoral dissertation explores the Communist Party-led process to construct a new narrative which endorses China's status as a rising but peaceful superpower. The process is driven by two interlinked phenomena, one internal and the other external. First, as widely perceived by Chinese social scientists and the general public alike, there is an ideological, or spiritual, vacuum in China. This is a result of the fundamental and rapid changes in Chinese society that have diminished the relevance of communism or socialism to the challenges in a market economy. The existence of the vacuum means that there is a need to build a new ideological basis for the people. Second, the leadership wishes to legitimize China's growing hard power, which gives rise to concern among the international community about China's assertiveness, with a soft power-based, non-threatening narrative. Understanding this process will be essential in delineating China's changing identity both internally and externally.

President and Party-leader Xi Jinping has coined the phrase "the Chinese Dream" to describe China's goals in the coming decades. According to the dream, China should rid itself of the last remnants of the perceived humiliations of the colonial era. Then China should regain its "rightful position" among the leading nations and the greatest civilizations in the world. Substantiating the dream requires a new narrative, and such a "strategic narrative" is probably being composed by the academic community with close affiliations to the Party. The narrative has to highlight the Party as the successor of all the dynasties that kept China unified and stable. It also needs to portray present-day China as the mantle-bearer of the best elements in traditional Chinese culture and a model to be emulated by the rest of the world. The composition of the narrative is supported by the Party's efforts to utilize traditional values – selected teachings from China's ancient philosophies, in particular from societally-oriented Confucianism – as a remedy for filling the ideological vacuum. There is a sense of urgency which is highlighted by the fact that in all previous decades of communist rule, traditional schools of thought, especially Confucianism, were considered reactionary, but now they are welcomed. The Party sees them as a patriotic alternative to any despicably "Western" or "universal" values.

The focus of this doctoral dissertation research is largely, but not solely, on the effects of the identity-building process on China's role as an international actor. The related phenomena and domestic debates have relevance for many aspects of Chinese society, including the discussion in China about democracy, human rights, and the rule of law.

By identifying the elements of the new narrative in formation, this doctoral dissertation contributes to the deconstruction of China's identity-building process. First, the study illustrates how the Party is instrumentalizing the traditional schools of thought, particularly Confucianism, by selecting only those elements that serve its interests,

such as loyalty to the state or diligence. Second, this research questions the credibility of the historical narrative used to substantiate the new identity. The study also pinpoints several loopholes in regard to the interpretation of the traditional philosophical concepts that are used to complement the narrative. Through a critical reading of both the contemporary policy sources and the classical texts quoted therein, the study illustrates how the teachings of the traditional schools of thought are often utilized in a misleading manner, and thus many of the claims used to build the basis of China's new state ideology do not stand up to closer scrutiny, even in the Chinese context.

This research is based on both primary Chinese sources, such as speeches and writings of Chinese leaders, as well as traditional philosophers, and secondary sources originating from academic research communities engaged in related research, both in China and internationally. It has been necessary to conduct careful studies of many classical texts in order to be able to evaluate whether, for instance, the numerous classical quotations in President Xi's speeches are selected out of context or represented in a misleading manner.¹ The Chinese academic articles have also been read with a similar awareness in regard to their content being possibly political in nature.

1.2 Objectives and scope

Understanding the domestic background is vital for analyzing China's external actions. Different political, economic and societal pressures influence the direction of all countries' foreign policies by limiting the choices available for the leadership. In the case of China, one has to pay special attention to the role and nature of the Communist Party. While the Party is often depicted as omnipotent and self-sufficient due to its opaqueness and lack of truly democratic structures, in reality it is also bound by domestic realities and popular pressures: even a single-party rule must enjoy a sufficient level of legitimacy in order to be able to survive in the long term. One particular aspect upon which the Party itself largely builds its legitimacy is the historical narrative describing its rule as a necessary and even inevitable outcome of past events. This narrative has a strong foreign policy-related dimension, as it stresses the dire straits of the late imperial China being the result of encroachment by colonial powers, and depicts the Communist Party as the final liberator.

The communist jargon habitually includes condemnation of many aspects of China's traditional society. After all, the Communist Party is the follower of the republican revolutionaries who already saw tradition mainly as an impediment to progress and development. It can therefore appear surprising that various official statements and speeches since Hu Jintao's era (2002–2012) have been putting a positive slant on many such aspects of tradition that had formerly been dismissed as feudal rot, or at least as meaningless remnants of the backward past. For instance, traditional festivals were made official holidays in 2007, and Hu Jintao called for the promotion of Chinese culture in a way which indicated more than just a gradual change from Jiang

1 This has required analytical research of the traditional schools of thought and has resulted in a Finnish-language monograph on Confucianism, comprising, in addition to the historico-philosophical chapters, a new, critical translation of the *Analects* (Kallio 2014).

Zemin's era (1989–2002). Jiang had also spoken of “the fine tradition of our national culture”, but only as an element of “socialist spiritual civilization”, equal to the strong points of other nations which should also be studied (Jiang 2002). In contrast, Hu called Chinese culture “an unfailing driving force for the Chinese nation”.

Chinese culture has been an unfailing driving force for the Chinese nation to keep its unity and make progress from generation to generation. We must have a comprehensive understanding of traditional Chinese culture, keep its essence and discard its dross to enable it to fit in with present-day society, stay in harmony with modern civilization, keep its national character and reflect changes of the times. We will further publicize the fine traditions of Chinese culture and use modern means of science and technology to exploit the rich resources of our national culture (Hu 2007).

Hu's call was preceded in 2004 by the closing remarks of the fourth plenum of the 16th Central Committee of the Communist Party, which affirmed that “China's advanced socialist culture” needs to be constructed on the basis of 5,000 years of traditional culture (Makeham 2008, 318). In the years that followed, institutes of traditional learning were established in several prestigious universities, and publishers began churning out book series that promoted traditional schools of thought.² These developments in China, which began in the middle of the last decade, have been dubbed “National Learning fever”, with National Learning, *guoxue* (國學), referring broadly to traditional Chinese culture or, more narrowly, to the core teachings of traditional Chinese schools of thought (Makeham 2011).³

This “fever” was not the result of a sudden infection but emerged gradually, following the heyday of the so-called Asian Values. In the 1990s, several Asian leaders expressed their belief in the power of traditional values, such as respect for education, loyalty to both the extended family and the state, preference for social harmony, and collectivism, in enabling the rise of the East Asian Tigers, South Korea, Singapore, Taiwan and Hong Kong (Ai 2008, 44–45). There was also a movement to “indigenize” social sciences, arising from the desire to challenge the universalistic claims of West-centrism (Makeham 2011, 19). This is what prepared the ground for the Chinese leadership, with their country in the next wave of rapid economic development, to embrace the idea of traditional Asian, or rather Chinese, values as the ideological means of countering Western dominance and the allurements of individualism (see Lodén 2006, 179–181). The official commendation functioned as an umbrella under which grassroots-level interests towards tradition, and related activities, could freely flourish.⁴

2 The first ‘national learning college’ (*guoxueyuan*, 國學院) was established at Renmin University in 2005.

3 The definition and demarcation of *guoxue* are contested.

4 The process of the rise of traditional values in all its complexity in China in recent decades has been perhaps most extensively, albeit not exclusively, analyzed by John Makeham in several books and articles (see Makeham 2008 & 2011). As pointed out by Ralph Weber (2013), Makeham has been treating the rise predominantly as an intellectual movement, overlooking its orchestration by the party-state.

Hu Jintao's era coincided with record-breaking economic growth, making China the second largest economy, surpassed only by the USA. Naturally, this was largely the result of the exponential growth which had already started much earlier, due to the systematic work of previous leadership generations since the beginning of the opening up and reform era in the 1980s. China's new wealth led observers both inside and outside China to start presenting evermore bolder visions of China's growing political and military power in the global arena.

Scholars in China have since become increasingly active in suggesting that a Chinese international relations theory will inevitably emerge as a consequence of China's growing role on the world stage on the one hand, and the rise of traditional values in China on the other (Yan 2011, 200). This indicates that the National Learning fever and Chinese foreign policies are potentially interconnected. Furthermore, the way in which the core of National Learning (or Traditional Learning, as I translate *guoxue* elsewhere in this dissertation) is interpreted by the Communist Party is inherently related to the Party's historical narrative, which in turn is reflected throughout its rhetoric and even in its actions.

The incumbent leader of China, Xi Jinping, coined the phrase "the Chinese Dream" as a slogan for his term which began in 2012, and it has since been used to describe China's goals in the coming decades. While undoubtedly influenced by the American Dream, it is in essence very different, being not a dream for Chinese individuals to pursue but a dream for the Chinese state to realize. According to Xi, the realization of the dream embodies "the great rejuvenation of the Chinese nation" (Xi 2014, 37–38). Seen against the Party's historical narrative, the rejuvenation means ridding China of any remnants of past humiliations, inflicted by colonial powers and wars, and further cementing China's territorial integrity and sovereignty. Hence, the Chinese Dream has strong patriotic, if not nationalistic, undertones.

Nationalism is a tool that is often used by any government in order to bolster its legitimacy, and none of the governments in East Asia is an exception in this regard. The wounds of history, in particular those inflicted by World War II, are kept purposefully open because they provide the easiest source for feeding nationalist sentiments when needed. For the Communist Party in China, this convenient tool is also a double-edged sword on two accounts. First, clinging onto the particular historical narrative of the humiliations wrought by Japan renders the Party incapable of making any concessions without appearing weak, even if letting bygones be bygones would make economic sense in terms of closer cooperation. Secondly, nationalism is a difficult concept in China as such because of the country's multi-ethnic character. Building a nation-state is still an uncompleted project, as witnessed by the rising Han nationalism, namely the nationalist sentiments of the majority ethnic group, as a challenger to the official nationalism (Kallio 2011, 31–40). What being "Chinese" actually means is not a clear-cut issue in Chinese society today. This is also reflected in the discussions regarding National Learning and its definition.

Confucianism plays a dominant role in the discourse relating to National Learning and its applications to politics, international relations included. It is impossible for the Communist Party to openly endorse Confucianism, which it once so vehemently condemned as reactionary, and efforts are being made to show that Xi Jinping treats the Chinese tradition as an organic amalgamation of the three oldest, major schools of

thought, namely Confucianism, Taoism and Legalism (Ye 2013). Buddhism has also enjoyed governmental attention in recent years as one of the main “indigenous” traditions in China. However, National Learning fever in China is largely discussed more or less synonymously with “the revival of Confucianism”. To what extent such a revival is a real phenomenon is debatable (see 4.2). Nevertheless, the plethora of books, journal articles and newspaper stories published both inside and outside China in recent years discussing the concrete or potential influence of Confucianism on Chinese society and politics makes the revival and its impact impossible to ignore.

Furthermore, in the light of the recent interest or even hype regarding China’s One Belt, One Road initiatives, which arguably stem from traditional Chinese thinking about the political order and may even have the potential to transform the structure of the existing international order, increasingly making China a challenger to the West, it is important to understand the nature of the said challenge and its historico-ideational roots (Godehardt 2016, 22–23). If the Communist Party of China is indeed in the process of redefining its strategic approach and rewriting parts of its narrative to allow more space for the teachings and values of the traditional schools of thought in its guiding ideology, alongside Marxism-Leninism and the legacies of the party leaders, starting with Mao Zedong,⁵ it is of major significance to the deciphering of China’s political actions.

In order to be able to explain the changes properly, one needs to understand where they originate from. This requires careful analysis of all their different elements and aspects, going beyond the superficial level and “deep-reading” the nuances instead in the Chinese cultural and linguistic contexts. The desire to provide some input into the exploration of how history and the traditional schools of thought, especially Confucianism, are being utilized in China has been the motivation for this study. The study has grown organically, and was not written as a doctoral dissertation originally. Nevertheless, all four peer-reviewed essays which — together with this summarizing report — form this dissertation (a research report, two book chapters, and a journal article) have a similar thread running through them. All discuss different aspects of the same question: What is the role of the so-called revival of traditional schools of thought in the formulation of the narratives that the party-state uses in order to legitimize its rule and China’s position in the world?

1.3 Methodological and theoretical considerations

This study differentiates between three narratives. Two of them, China’s national/historical narrative and the Communist Party’s narrative, are almost identical. They both build upon a set of attributes stemming from the perceived lessons learned from Chinese history, related to what lies at the heart of China’s core interests, namely sovereignty and territorial integrity. These attributes are discussed in chapter 2.1, and the main ones are listed in the upper box of Figure 6.1. They include the myth that

5 The current mantra for the ideological foundation of the Communist Party is “Marxism-Leninism, Mao Zedong Thought, Deng Xiaoping Theory, and the important thoughts of the ‘Three Represents’ and the ‘Scientific Outlook on Development’”. The two ‘important thoughts’ refer to Jiang Zemin’s and Hu Jintao’s theoretical contributions.

China has predominantly been a unified state historically, and that unity has been the best guarantee of China's prosperity; the fabricated portrayal of China as a multinational state since time immemorial, its peoples having always inhabited more or less the same territories; and the collective memories, purposefully sustained by the party-state, of the humiliations inflicted upon China by colonial powers, including Japan. Of course, these represent only a rough classification, which can be contested.

The two aforementioned narratives can be said to differ in their respective emphasis. While China's national/historical narrative underlines defending national integrity and the importance of national unity, the Communist Party's narrative stresses opposing hegemonism in the world as China's core value and goal. The third narrative, China's strategic narrative, is still being formulated.

National identity and national/strategic narratives are usually discussed in international relations studies, while the traditional Chinese schools of thought belong to the realm of Sinology. This doctoral dissertation in effect combines social sciences phenomena with humanistic research and, in so doing, recognizes the potential power of history, culture, and tradition, while being cognizant of the commonalities of societies and international politics.

Chalmers Johnson, a renowned American scholar on Japan, once posed the rhetorical question (Johnson & Keehn 1994): "Why do you need to know Japanese or anything about Japan's history and culture if the methods of rational choice will explain why Japanese politicians and bureaucrats do the things they do?" The answer can be found in a social science classic (King, Keohane & Verba 1995, 35): "Good social science attempts to go beyond [the] particulars ... to more general knowledge. Generalization, however, does not eliminate the importance of the particular. In fact, the very purpose of moving from the particular to the general is to improve our understanding of both." Obtaining the best results in area studies calls for a multidisciplinary approach and cross-fertilization between different fields, such as social sciences and humanities.

This dissertation thus rests on theoretical eclecticism, which does not imply drawing methods and theories haphazardly from different frameworks, but rather refers to the avoidance of any single theoretical straitjacket; it is a means of rational instrumentalization of those elements that are useful in reaching a comprehensive understanding of the phenomena at hand. Accordingly, this dissertation follows a holistic approach, not aimed at the formation of a new theory but only at providing feedback for a better generalized understanding of China by deciphering those uniquely Chinese elements in the rhetoric of the Communist party leaders and other parties in the societal debate in China, which ordinarily might escape the attention of international relations scholars not specialized in China and the Chinese language.⁶

To this end, this dissertation perhaps provides some input towards a "single-country theory of foreign policy" for China, such as that suggested by James N. Rosenau for the Soviet Union (Rosenau 1989). Rosenau stated that "leaders and publics in any society at any moment in time are responsive to both their own pasts and the dynamics of prevailing domestic and international structures" (*ibid.*, 63). Hence, he was sketching a developmental theory that would help to anticipate how the major

6 This approach may or may not be akin to what Geremie R. Barmé has called "New Sinology" (see Barmé 2011).

determinants of a country's external behaviour interact over time through within-system, across-time comparisons. One would need to be able to distinguish both the idiographic and the nomothetic factors in order to be able to tackle the core question: How and when do the unique aspects modify or override the general dynamics, and vice versa? Such a theory would then help to explain and anticipate "the likely developments and/or choices at crucial junctures" (ibid., 72).

In the light of Rosenau's idea, this dissertation can be said to further the identification and analysis of the idiographic factors in the "case study" of China, especially through highlighting the nature and character of China's "strategic narrative". In this dissertation, strategic narrative is first and foremost regarded as a form of national narrative, namely a narrative that "set[s] out what the story of the state or nation has, what values and goals it has" (Roselle, Miskimmon & O'Loughlin, 2014, 76). Narratives can be power resources, and they "can be used strategically as representational force" (ibid.). Strategic narrative "directly addresses the formation, projection and diffusion, and reception of ideas in the international system" (ibid., 74) and asks (ibid., 71): "What are the best methods to influence international affairs?"

The concept of a strategic narrative is discussed with reference to the United States in *A National Strategic Narrative* (Woodrow Wilson Center, 2006). It defines the term and its rationale as follows:

We have a national security strategy, which sets forth four core national interests and outlines a number of dimensions of an overarching strategy to advance those interests in the 21st century world. But that is a document written by specialists for specialists. It does not answer a fundamental question that more and more Americans are asking. Where is the United States going in the world? How can we get there? What are the guiding stars that will illuminate the path along the way? We need a story with a beginning, middle, and projected happy ending that will transcend our political divisions, orient us as a nation, and give us both a common direction and the confidence and commitment to get to our destination (Woodrow Wilson Center, 2006).

The launch of the Chinese Dream and the related rhetoric is a clear indication that China aims to have its own strategic narrative. The Dream as national rejuvenation is strongly based on China's historical narrative, but projects it further into the future. The formation of this strategic narrative is outlined in graphical form in Figure 6.2. The Dream aims to answer the questions of where China is going and how it will get there. These are questions of national identity. National identity in the Chinese context is extensively discussed by Lowell Dittmer and Samuel S. Kim (ed., 1993a). According to Dittmer & Kim (1993b, 30), "[w]hat the state 'is' is defined in a symbol system known as the national essence, which consists of the myths, ritual, ceremonies, and folklore that relate how the nation came to be and what it stands for". This closely aligns China's historical narrative with Traditional Learning, the supposed amalgamation of China's traditional wisdom.⁷

7 In the early 20th century, the *guoxue* movement was originally interlinked with the desire to define China's national essence, *guocui* (國粹).

Furthermore, Dittmer and Kim (1993b, 30) postulate that an identity is constituted by the accumulated roles of a state-actor, and its roles in turn are made up of its foreign-policy actions. National roles were first comprehensively discussed by Kalevi Holsti. Holsti (1970) focused on the idea that a state's leaders harbour beliefs or images about the identity of the state, which in turn shape the way that the state acts in the international system. He called these beliefs or images "national role conceptions", and argued that they made states act differently at different times. There are thus differing views on how the interconnection between roles and identity works, and the question remains of how one operationalizes the theoretical linkage between identity and foreign policy in the empirical analysis. Lisbeth Aggestam (1999) draws together Dittmer and Kim's views (1993b) on the one hand, and Holsti's on the other, by arguing that "roles may be generated not only from international systemic forces, but from the dynamics found within ... domestic politics".

Dittmer and Kim (1993c, 241) call attention to the view in national identity theory that "domestic societal factors are generally more important than external systemic ones in the formation of national identity whereas external systemic factors generally take precedence in determining the outcomes of national identity role enactments", which means that there may be a disconnect between the identity and the roles. This disconnect can, however, often be explained through the Chinese leaders' world view, which is reflected in the national narrative: While China is inherently peaceful, as the narrative states, it must also never be humiliated again, and must protect its core interests even militarily.

As stated at the beginning of this chapter, the world view of the Chinese leaders, and the corresponding national narrative, rests on defending (or redefining) China's national integrity and dignity. This is known as National Salvation (see 2.1). It has been central to the revolutionaries' and their successors' ideology since the late 19th century, as described in the first essay of this dissertation (Kallio 2011). National Salvation is in essence the Chinese national doctrine, and thus the narrative has elements of dogma. There are also efforts by the Party-state to address the spiritual vacuum, caused by the lack of ideological content in China's current form of 'communism', through the creation of a new ideological basis that would be nurtured by two sources – the national narrative on the one hand, and the indigenous, traditional schools of thought on the other. From the point of view of political science, these efforts are akin to the creation of a civil or political religion. Both terms refer to a political ideology that has sociological and ideological similarities, and that may fulfil cultural and political functions similar to a religion.

Mika Aaltola describes one type of politico-religious role that is central to contemporary world politics as follows:

They offer a hope of restoration and of a return to fundamental values. They do this by applying culturally embedded visions of right and wrong. These visions are often overtly religious in tone. ... The captivating and enigmatic mythological gallery of historical figures provides a rich source of authority and charisma for the custodians of principle (Aaltola 2008, 17).

Today, there are many political actors in China who comport themselves as such “custodians of principle”. Many of them, both on the side of the establishment and of the dissidents, use Traditional Learning or, more specifically, Confucianism, as their source of authority. Whether we label them promoters of civil or political religion depends on our angle of vision.

As Aaltola points out, civil religion is associated with pluralism, voluntarism and individualism, whereas political religion is often equated with coercive totalitarian systems. Political religion is often connected with Islam in particular (Aaltola 2008, 28–29). “The distinction between civil religion and the more conservative formulation of political religion partially overlaps the distinction between society-centric and state-centric approaches to the problem of international order”, writes Aaltola (*ibid.*).

Intriguingly, in China today we see processes furthering both civil and political religion at the same time, and those promoting a political religion-like ideology do not always represent the establishment, Jiang Qing being a case in point (described in Kallio 2011, 99–100, 121–123). Civil and political religion in China are also discussed by Bart Dessein (2014) and Anna Sun (2013). Dessein shows how China had a “religious” narrative, featuring a divine origin and a divine mission, even when China was just a proto-nation. Dessein further illustrates how the narrative brought “China” together as a civilization and as a state, creating the image of the country as a moral high ground surrounded by barbarians. With the adaptation of the modern, Western ideas of nation and state, the narrative developed into political theology, which was used by the ruling authorities — first by the leaders of the Republic and later by the People’s Republic — as an instrument “to ensure the stability of the state through appealing to the population’s patriotic sentiments for a divine nation” (Dessein 2014, 59–60). As Dessein expounds, this has been achieved through political historiography, which connects the mission of the unified Chinese state — the doctrine of National Salvation — to the inherited, age-old politico-historical narratives. He concludes: “In China, therefore, the contemporary politico-religious narrative appeals to the Chinese citizens as heirs of a divine tradition, and as responsible to bring the divine mission of the nation to a good end” (*ibid.*, 60).

Dessein argues particularly about the Confucian “doctrine” being utilized to support the Party-state’s top-down political religion, whereas Sun discusses Confucianism more from the angle of a bottom-up civil religion, albeit pointing out that civil religion is difficult to define: According to one view, civil religion can only exist in a democratic, republican society (Sun 2013, 181). Sun concludes by remarking that there is conflicting evidence on whether the moral and ethical ideals of Confucianism will eventually fill the spiritual vacuum (*ibid.*, 182). This doctoral dissertation simply asserts that it is possible to bring some sense to the discrepancy between China as a civilization and China as a nation-state using political religion as a lens through which to focus the analysis.

In this dissertation, the positions of the Party-state are analysed through the authoritative speeches and writings ostensibly reflecting the collectively agreed party line. This does not imply that the Communist Party is to be understood as a monolith, nor does it preclude the possibility of the existence of different viewpoints within the Party on the role of the traditional schools of thought. Indeed, it is likely that some influential actors within the party apparatus regard tradition as a potential ideological

element to be merged into the party doctrine, while others may put more emphasis on the practical, Realpolitik-related uses of tradition, such as its nationalistic attraction. Furthermore, one may plausibly expect that there are many differing interpretations of the various aspects of tradition, just as there are within society at large. Nevertheless, in view of the nature of political religion as a dogmatic ideology, it is reasonable to regard the Party as a unitary actor for the purposes of this study.

A major element in all of the essays forming this dissertation is discussion and analysis of the concepts and categories of Confucianism used in the argumentation promoting the “correct doctrine” of either the Party-state or others. Methodologically, the study thus adopts a basic, interpretative, humanistic research approach in posing questions about common assumptions in an analytical manner. In particular, it reflects on contemporary usages set against early references in the Confucian canon, and demonstrates that many modern references to classical texts, or quotations therefrom, are instrumental deviations or simplifications that are not supported by the early texts themselves.

It can be justifiably argued that any modern usages of classical texts are forms of instrumentalization, and all interpretations may be influenced by political or other agendas, even in an unconscious manner. Therefore, it is not suggested in this dissertation that “true” readings of any textual passages are any more likely than “false” readings. On the contrary, there are often several acceptable interpretations. As pointed out in the fourth essay (Kallio 2015c), any one concept or category may belong to several locutions, while their semantic usages are not necessarily consistent over time and context (Raphals 1992, 231). When discussing any early textual passage, it must therefore be recognized that it does not necessarily possess an “original” meaning.⁸ It must also be acknowledged that there are different interpretational practices based on different methodologies which may all result in equally valid, yet sometimes differing, interpretations. With regard to the classical textual passages, the philological approach used in this dissertation is reductionist instead of traditionalist in the sense of disregarding the readings imposed by the commentarial tradition, while the relevant context is nevertheless taken into account. The goal has been to produce clear and concise translations instead of defining the “true” meaning. In other words, the purpose of comparing the modern and early interpretations of classical textual passages is to “rise above Confucian hermeneutics” (see Kallio 2015c, 80–81) by demonstrating that even the earliest usages of traditional concepts or categories were subject to interpretational difficulties, and therefore choosing one meaning as the “true” one is an act of instrumentalization in itself.

This doctoral dissertation has benefitted from the basic ideas of thematic narrative analysis, which is a process for comparing the function of the language at the textual as well as the cultural level. The sources used in this study, particularly the primary ones (speeches and writings by Chinese leaders, as well as traditional philosophers), are well-suited to analytical study due to the formalized nature of the language used in modern Chinese politics as well as many ancient classics (Schoenhals 1992, 1–3). The language of Chinese politics is used as a form of perlocution, which is “the intentional use of language to produce consequential effects upon the feelings, thoughts, and

8 See for example the discussion on the different interpretational traditions regarding the key Confucian concept *ren* (仁), and the difficulties in translation arising from it, in Kallio (transl. & ed.) 2014, 37–38 and *passim*.

actions of people” (ibid., 5). Formalized language often serves “the political function of maintaining social cohesion and/or national unity” (ibid., 26), which is clear when probing China’s historical/national narrative and the Communist Party’s narrative.

Interestingly, anthropologists studying traditional societies have noted that the use of formalized language leads the societies into confrontation with modernity. The code used in the formalized speech, as well as the system which lends power to the code, are dismissed as anachronistic by the “modernistic” younger generations (ibid., 26). This is similarly evident in contemporary China, as the first essay of this dissertation (Kallio 2011) reveals, and this confrontation is also the motivation behind the Communist Party’s construction of a new discourse (the strategic narrative) as well as the reason why the Party seeks to maintain its monopoly over the formalized language.

In his seminal study on formalized language in China, Michael Schoenhals (1992) underlines the necessity to study Chinese rhetoric and other elements in the Chinese political discourse in the original language (Schoenhals 1992, 6). This doctoral dissertation relies on a careful reading of original Chinese sources and translating their key components. Producing English translations of the texts, both contemporary and classical, has proved very useful because in the Chinese cultural context a concept can exist just as an empty word laden with the assumption that its meaning is both clear to all readers and always the same, whereas producing a translation would reveal the different meanings in different contexts.

This dissertation has been inspired by the coding practices of thematic analysis, although they have not been followed in a strict manner. The emphasis areas, or themes, in China’s national/historical narrative and the Communist Party’s narrative (marked with bullet points in Figure 6.1) can be considered “codes”, as they are labels for the most important recurring and defining themes in the narratives. However, the thematic analysis of narratives should, at least according to Catherine Kohler Riessman (2008, 74), be case-centred, reject the idea of generic explanations, and be guided by prior theory. In this sense, this dissertation represents neither narrative nor discourse analysis methodologically, nor does it aim to qualify as social sciences research. Nevertheless, the Sinological ponderings in the essays are meant to advance understanding of China’s national identity and foreign policy.

1.4 Dissertation structure

This dissertation consists of four peer-reviewed essays published between 2011 and 2015, namely a research report, a journal article and two book chapters, as well as this summarizing report.

The research report (Kallio 2011: *Tradition in Chinese Politics. The Party-state’s reinvention of the past and the critical response from public intellectuals*. FIIA Report 27, 2011. Helsinki: The Finnish Institute of International Affairs. 147 pages.) introduces and analyses the debate related to the content and interpretation of history, and provides the historical and philosophical basis necessary for understanding the phenomena related to defining the essence of Chinese tradition. The focus of the report is on two subjects: Confucianism and unity. In regard to the former, the report questions the efforts to delineate Confucianism in any absolute manner. In regard to the latter, the report asks

whether the dogma of unity can really be based on history. In regard to both, the report maps the elements in both the Party's narrative and the other competing narratives.

The first book chapter (Kallio 2015a: "Toward a Harmonious World? Emerging Thinking on a Chinese International Relations Model". In *New Trends and Challenges in China's Foreign Policy*. Edited by Joseph Y.S. Cheng and Marita Siika. Hong Kong 2015: Contemporary China Research Project/City University of Hong Kong. Pp. 87–113.) was written in 2012 and provides an initial analysis of the Party-supported efforts to create a Chinese international relations theory. It critically discusses several Chinese academic articles that have been written with the aim of producing elements for such a theory, based on the authors' interpretations of a traditional, Confucian world view. The chapter asks what can be deciphered from the different elements in that discussion with a view to understanding or even predicting China's foreign policy behaviour.

The journal article (Kallio 2015b: "Dreaming of the Great Rejuvenation of the Chinese Nation". *Fudan Journal of Humanities and Social Sciences*. Vol. 8, Issue 4 [2015]. Pp. 521–532.) discusses the meaning of "the Chinese Dream", starting with the fact that President Xi Jinping has defined its realization as "the grand rejuvenation of the Chinese nation". The article elucidates how the rejuvenation is often conceptualized through the ancient concept of *Tianxia*, All Under Heaven, as a system in which China was seen as the central civilization, a non-hegemonic power which relied on force only in order to protect itself against outside aggression. The article questions China's ability and willingness to follow this ancient tradition of peacefulness, as well as the historicity of the tradition itself.

The second book chapter (Kallio 2015c: "Carving Out a Role for a Confucian China on the World Stage". In *Contemporary East Asia and the Revival of Confucianism*. Edited by Jana Rošker & Nataša Visočnik. Newcastle-upon-Tyne 2015: Cambridge Scholars Publishing. Pp. 75–97.) analyses further the possible nature of a Chinese international relations model, focusing on the challenges related to the use of traditional values in rhetoric aimed at international audiences. The chapter investigates the central Confucian concepts used in the rhetoric, analyses their original meanings and connotations, and scrutinizes the inherent problems within the Confucian narrative itself. The article contributes to the discussion on the compatibility between Confucianism and democracy and asks where among contemporary societal movements "the wandering soul" of Confucianism might find a new home.

2 Research contribution

2.1 Tradition in Chinese politics

The research report *Tradition in Chinese Politics* (Kallio 2011) forms the foundation of all the other parts of this dissertation. Based on the works of Chinese and other researchers, it debunks the myth of unity, which states that the main flow in Chinese history has been unity and that the current territory of the People's Republic reflects the "natural" and historical boundaries of the empire. It concludes that China was a unified, "Chinese-ruled" state for only two-fifths of the imperial era. Even this refers only to "China Proper", the historical core region of the Han-Chinese nationality. The unity of "greater China" is a relatively modern phenomenon that has been achieved mainly through coercion, and the "Chinese (*Zhonghua*) Nation" is a modern invention. Similarly, China's past as a "culturalist" union which has "always" encompassed the minority areas of the present-day People's Republic is a historiographic fabrication.

The myth of unity is upheld by the Communist Party because it is a central element in the narrative legitimizing the Party's rule. The narrative rests on the doctrine of National Salvation (*jiu guo*, 救國; 'saving the nation'), referring to defending (or redefining) national integrity and dignity, and invariably presented as modernization: shedding the old shackles that constrained economic, scientific and military development. The doctrine, which has been central to the revolutionaries' and their successors' ideology since the late 19th century, can be regarded as China's political religion (Li 1994, 155, 157–158). Today, it largely explains the political sensitivities related to the Taiwan Issue as well as the tensions in Tibet and Sinkiang, because it is inherently tied to the dogma of unity. The Party's narrative stresses unity as the norm in China's history, and presents the periods of division as anomalies, plagued by chaos and misery. This is based on the theory which is at least a millennium old and which affirms that the unity of the state is the prerequisite of the ruler's true mandate (Beck 1986, 374).

The narrative makes the Party the primal authority in the interpretation of the doctrine and its essential dogmas by designating the Party as the successor of all the dynasties that kept China unified and stable. The narrative also portrays present-day China as the mantle-bearer of the best elements in traditional Chinese culture and a model to be emulated by the rest of the world. The realization of Xi Jinping's Chinese Dream, then, ultimately means that China will regain its "rightful position" among the leading nations as well as the greatest civilizations in the world.

Furthermore, the research report concludes that Confucianism, as instrumentalized by the Party, is just another tool for National Salvation. Confucianism, a central component of the artificial concoction called Traditional Learning, is used to provide legitimization for the Party through such values as harmony and loyalty to the state, and thus the Party in turn mobilizes resources which enhance the so-called revival of Confucianism. The report points out that there are many elements in the revival

which are not under the Party's control, and which do not all go in the same direction. This is due to the very nature of Confucianism itself. In particular, the elements of Confucianism stressing personal enlightenment don't chime with the Party dogma. What's more, it is impossible to reach a singularly concise or indisputable definition of the "core" of Confucianism, as the report demonstrates. Therefore, and keeping in mind the Party's history as a force which used to strongly condemn Confucianism, the report attests that there will most likely be no room for Confucianism as the "grammar" of Chinese society in the foreseeable future. Furthermore, Confucianism faces difficulties in simply becoming part of the "vocabulary", too.

2.2 Towards a harmonious world?

The second essay (Kallio 2015a) contends that the efforts to create a "Confucian International Relations (IR) Theory" have so far yielded few results. This was true when the essay was originally drafted in 2012, and the situation still remains largely the same. Behind the idea of creating an IR theory for China is the desire to present China's rise as peaceful. A white paper discussing China's peaceful development, published by the State Council in 2011, stated: "The world has been believed to be a harmonious whole in the Chinese culture ever since the ancient times. This belief has a lasting impact on the thinking and acts of the Chinese nation, which is an important value that the Chinese people follow in handling interpersonal relationships, the relationship between man and nature and relations between different countries. ... China's peaceful development has broken away from the traditional pattern where a rising power was bound to seek hegemony" (Gov.cn 2011).

Against this background, it is understandable why the traditional Chinese world view, and the corresponding system of inter-state relations, is almost invariably presented through the concept of *Tianxia*, 'All Under Heaven', by Chinese academics. *Tianxia* was a cultural union with the Chinese empire (and its ruler, the Emperor) as the centre. It was surrounded by widening circles of "the other": first vassal states ruled by the Emperor's blood relatives closest to the centre, then the nations that had agreed to pay homage to the Emperor, followed by other barbarians furthest away. It is usually presented as a "value-regime", held together by the virtuous morality of the Chinese Emperor, who would gain the respect of the lesser rulers as naturally as stars orbit the Polestar (see *Analects*, "Wei zheng" 1, as reprinted in Sturgeon, ed., 2011⁹). From the "Chinese" perspective, the Westphalian system, in contrast, merely signifies a loose collection of states driven by their own national interests; in the words of one Chinese scholar, it is a "non-world" (Zhao 2005).

The ideal of the *Tianxia* system can easily be contested just by looking at the quotations that Chinese scholars use to bolster their claims. For instance, Li Fawei reminds his readers about the conciliatory foreign policy of the Ming Dynasty, and quotes Emperor Xuande, who wrote in 1428: "In controlling the barbarians, defence is the

9 The locations of the classical textual references provided in this paper, unless otherwise indicated, refer to the *Chinese Text Project* website (Sturgeon, ed., 2011). Unless otherwise indicated, all translations from Chinese are by the author.

best method”. Li omitted the part of the quotation where Emperor Xuande also said that the barbarians are uncivilized vermin that must be kept at bay: “The sages (of old) compared All Under Heaven to a household: The Central Kingdom is the building, and the barbarians of the four compass points are what is outside the garden walls. In the house there are people living, rites and music, and a proper hierarchy; whereas only grass, trees and insects live outside the walls. Such is the Heavenly Order”.¹⁰ Li also explains that the proprietary formalities – rites – associated with the tributary system signalled comity between China and the tribute-bearing nations, by quoting *Hanshu*: “Rites are necessary for regulating external relations and setting the differences; ... the differences mean fear and respect, ... and when there is fear and respect, there is no contention” (*Hanshu*, “Liyuezhì” 3, as reprinted in Sturgeon, ed., 2011). Although Li says that this exemplifies the tradition of courtesy and reciprocity in China’s external relations, the quotation speaks of a rather unequal system. In actuality, it would be possible to draw the conclusion from the same quotations that the real heritage of imperial China’s foreign relations is simply a sharp division between “us” and “the other” and a blind faith in the moral and cultural superiority of the Central Kingdom.

Judging by the related discussion in China so far, the essay argues that no Confucian IR Theory has been formulated as yet. It is, nevertheless, possible to detect the outline of a skeletal model. Putting traditional concepts aside, and reading morality as a code of conduct, we may then interpret *Tianxia* in “modern” terms simply as a model for rule-based community or commonwealth, global in scope and international or even supranational in character. The authority to define the rules would lie within the state that manifests responsible and moral leadership. In essence, there would be a mental tributary system where the other states revolve around the moral leader. The essay poses the question of whether the model implies that the position of the Polestar may only belong to China.

The essay concludes that the theorizing efforts, and the skeletal model, may be just another way of hiding China’s real identity behind the mask of benevolent Confucius, and leaves it to further research to determine to what extent the “model” will actually guide China’s foreign policy decision-making.

2.3 Dreaming of the great rejuvenation of the Chinese nation

The third essay (Kallio 2015b) further questions China’s ability and willingness to follow the ancient tradition of peacefulness, already outlined above, as well as the historicity of the tradition itself. The essay starts by discussing “the Chinese Dream” (*Zhongguo meng*, 中國夢), the slogan coined by Xi Jinping, which is presented as the guiding principle of China’s politics all the way up to the 100th anniversary of the People’s Republic in 2049, and which posits that the Chinese Dream is fundamentally different from the American Dream. When President Xi Jinping coined the slogan, he was undoubtedly inspired by the existence of the American Dream. While many Chinese are tempted to

10 The original as copied on the website Fanren8.com (no year): 盖圣人以天下为家、中国犹堂宇、四夷则藩垣之外也。堂宇人所居、有礼乐有上下、藩垣之外草木昆虫从而生长之、亦天道也。

make their own interpretations of what the “Dream” should mean for them personally, the Chinese Dream – in contrast to the inherently individualistic American Dream – is collective. *Zhongguo Meng* should really be translated as ‘the Dream of China’ because it refers to the aspirations of the entire nation as to what China should become in the future. Xi has stated quite clearly that the Dream is about China’s great national rejuvenation (Xi 2014, 37–38). Seen against China’s official historical narrative, the rejuvenation means ridding China of any remnants of past humiliations, brought about by colonial powers and wars, and further cementing China’s territorial integrity and sovereignty. Thus the Chinese Dream has a strong patriotic, if not nationalistic, ethos.

The essay goes on to discuss the possible ways in which China is aiming to realize its Dream and its rejuvenation, based on the clues which Xi Jinping’s speeches offer. He has stated repeatedly that the answers to China’s questions will be found in Chinese soil, in Chinese tradition, and that China needs no Western models, which have been tried and found wanting (Tang & Han 2014). This leads one back to China’s traditional schools of thought, and indeed Xi has reiterated that traditional culture is China’s most profound form of soft power (Global Times 2014a).

The essay focuses on the discussions by Chinese academics related to the ancient concept of *Tianxia* and its possible modern manifestations, paying particular attention to the widely publicized book *Zhongguo Meng* (“The Chinese Dream”) by Professor Liu Mingfu from China’s National Defence University. He draws on the historical casuistry which is often heard in China, namely that the Chinese society was historically agricultural and sedentary, and claims that this has given birth to the culture which makes China inherently peaceful and anti-hegemonistic, whereas it is the nomadic origin of the “West” which has made it warlike (Liu 2009, 129–130). Similar thinking is also used to prove the tenability of China’s most famous foreign policy adage, “Bide our time and build up our capabilities”, coined by Deng Xiaoping. It is usually explained as meaning that China contents itself with domestic development and has no ambitions to exert its power outside its own borders.

The essay points out that the best-before date for Deng’s slogan seems to have expired, due to Xi Jinping’s statements. Xi has stated that China already has more confidence and capability than at any other time in Chinese history (People.com.cn 2012), and that China should use “proactive” diplomacy in particular in relation to its neighbours (Xinhuanet 2013). Correspondingly, Liu Mingfu has warned that China should not forget its martial spirit nor shy away from war should it be necessary for safeguarding its peaceful development (Liu 2009, 245–247). The essay contrasts Liu’s ideas with those of the long-time China-watcher within the US administration, Dr Christopher Ford, who is wary of accepting the *Tianxia*-based Confucian model of the international system as a true alternative to the prevailing one, voicing fears that the over-emphasis on maintaining harmony may be used as justification for suppressing “unharmonious” conduct (Ford 2014).

The essay concludes that China’s national rejuvenation, as well as the realization of the Chinese Dream, are closely related to safeguarding and strengthening China’s sovereignty and territorial integrity. That makes the status of Taiwan the most important unresolved issue regarding the rejuvenation.¹¹ The separation of Taiwan from

11 Vice Premier Qian Qichen explicitly tied the reunification of Taiwan and Mainland China together with the national rejuvenation in a speech delivered on 22 January, 2001 (Qian 2001).

the Mainland is the biggest obstacle preventing China from completing its territorial integrity. As long as Taiwan remains a de facto independent nation, the Party cannot boast of having returned China's borders to what they were before foreign interventions in the colonial era. In other words, as long as Taiwan is not an integral part of China, the legitimacy of the Communist Party is incomplete. Therefore, the only acceptable solution to the issue from the perspective of the Party is reunification. When one remembers that the feud between Taiwan and the Mainland has the potential to escalate into an international military conflict between major powers, an entirely peaceful China is not on the cards in the long term.

2.4 Carving out a role for a Confucian China on the world stage

The fourth essay (Kallio 2015c) focuses on the historicity of “Confucian International Relations” on the one hand, and on their contemporary relevance on the other. It distinguishes between three approaches used in Chinese academic discussions in support of the claim for the existence of Confucian IR thought. The first approach is to list some relevant key Confucian concepts and virtues and discuss their applicability to international relations. The second approach is to look at those Confucian texts that explicitly talk of state-to-state relations, and to analyse the modes of behaviour expressed in them. Finally, the third approach is to sketch a Chinese world view on the basis of a variety of Confucian texts and to project that idealized world view into the practicalities of the modern world.¹²

The first approach can be criticized for disregarding the numerous semantic shifts that many of the central concepts and categories of Confucianism have undergone. Furthermore, it fails to recognize that rival schools of rival philosophers have used the same concepts to advance very different ideas (Raphals 1992, 7), or that any one concept, or Confucian virtue, may belong to several locutions while their semantic usages are not necessarily consistent over time and context (Raphals 1992, 231). The second approach often leads to the pitfall of extrapolating even those remarks that are predominantly related to the state's internal affairs into the realm of international relations. Many of the instances in the classical texts, superficially referring to state-to-state relations, actually speak of the ruler's soft power, which emerges only as a byproduct of his virtuousness towards his own subjects.¹³

The essay approves of the validity of the third approach to an extent. This approach tries to distill something essential and permanent from the Chinese worldview, which again leads to the concept of *Tianxia*, and how it has remained central to Chinese thinking even up to the early republican era. Most famously, the “Father of the Republic”, Sun Yat-sen, adopted as his slogan the ancient adage *Tianxia wei gong* (天下為公), which is today most often understood as “We all share a common world”.

12 A completely different, fourth approach is presented by Qin Yaqing who promotes a “relational theory of world politics” built upon the idea of interrelatednesses resulting from the interplay of *yin* and *yang* (Qin 2016).

13 Another discussion, not touched upon in the essay, questions the relevance of the Confucian ideals, such as the preference for non-violence, in the face of the historical realities (see e.g. Johnston 1998, 236–242).

Many Chinese scholars see the epitome of China's modern foreign relations, the Five Principles of Peaceful Coexistence (which include the principle of non-interference in other countries' internal affairs), as parts in a continuum of the traditional Confucian principles. Nevertheless, the essay calls for regarding the origin of the saying *Tianxia wei gong* in its original setting, and questions the tendencies to extrapolate *Tianxia* and the ideal revolving around that concept into a form of cosmopolitanism. Instead, supported by the thinking of the prominent political theorist Wu Jiaxiang, the essay argues that *Tianxia wei gong* originally related to the opposition towards hereditary rule and meant that the Empire belonged not just to one clan but to all.

Based on Wu Jiaxiang's ideas, the essay furthermore attests that the ancient Confucian ideal, epitomized in the aforementioned interpretation of *Tianxia wei gong*, bears at least a superficial resemblance to a modern theory of government advocating a federation of autonomous communes, known as communalism. It has been said that since the revolutions which ended the position of Confucianism as China's main ideology at the turn of the last century, Confucianism has been a wandering soul without a body (Yu 1998, 229). The essay suggests that by joining hands with the communalist movements, the Confucian soul might find a new home in a way that would allow for Confucianism to be seen as compatible with liberalism and democracy, thus tentatively repudiating those Sinologists who present Confucianism as an alternative road to modernization and use it to criticize liberal democracy.¹⁴

14 This suggestion, dealt with only in passing in this book chapter, is discussed more thoroughly in Kallio 2016b.

3 Results summary

3.1 The communist core values and the six new virtues

The essays in this doctoral dissertation firstly explore thoughts drawn from ancient Chinese philosophy and evaluate their application in contemporary rhetoric (see 3.1 below). Second, the essays examine the application of ancient Chinese philosophy in the field of foreign relations in particular (see 3.2). Third, the essays discuss the instrumentalization of ancient Chinese philosophy (see 3.3). Furthermore, the essays and the conclusions drawn in this summarizing report also contribute to the analysis of the formation process of China's strategic narrative (see 4.4).

The Chinese leadership is actively trying to tie selected ancient values to the socialist jargon. Looking at the Confucian values in particular, they are increasingly defined through the interests of the state, society, and the collective, encapsulating patriotism, social stability, and self-sacrifice (see e.g. Luo 1999, 405–441). In contrast, such arguably “original” Confucian ideas (see Jiang 2007) as seeing people as active subjects, or rebelliousness, are disregarded.¹⁵

In February 2014, the Communist Party published its list of “socialist core values”. The list includes prosperity, democracy, civility, harmony, freedom, equality, justice, the rule of law,¹⁶ patriotism, dedication, integrity and friendship (Xinhuanet 2014). Since then, the list has been prominently displayed on billboards all over China.

An article in the Chinese Party organ *Renmin ribao* (Ye 2016), an installment in a series explaining Xi Jinping's principles of governance, had this to say about the roots of the socialist core values: “The national spirit with patriotism as its core as well as our splendid traditional culture of promoting philanthropy, keeping the people's best at heart, guarding honesty, cherishing justice, fostering harmony, and seeking Universal Commonwealth contribute equally to our outlook on the core values through the profound, historical, accumulated wisdom which they represent”. The article further stressed the principles of making the past serve the present (*gu wei jin yong*, 古為今用) and weeding out the old to bring forth the new (*tui chen chu xin*, 推陳出新). The article then posed a rhetorical question about the importance of the core values, and responded thus: “The (correct) outlook on the core values is the soul of cultural soft power; it is the most important factor in building cultural soft power” (ibid.).

The set of six elements of the “splendid traditional culture” originates from a speech by Xi Jinping where it was used as an example of how the traditional Chinese values are an important source of the socialist core values (Xiao 2015, 357). It is actually a list

15 I have comprehensively analysed different interpretations of Confucianism during various eras in Chinese history in Kallio 2014.

16 In Chinese, *fazhi* 法治. It is debatable whether it can be translated as the rule of law. A more accurate translation would be ‘rule by law’.

of Confucian guidelines, written into a slogan in literary Chinese, complete with the ‘Universal Commonwealth’ (*Datong* 大同), which originally referred to a Confucian ideal society.¹⁷ Professor Xiao Qunzhong from Beijing’s prestigious Renmin University has dubbed the values presented in the slogan Xi Jinping’s “six new virtues” (ibid., 359), and has attempted to bridge them with the socialist core values. Although Xiao agrees with Xi and claims that the latter are an embodiment of the former (ibid., 364), he is unable to find direct links between them.

It is unclear how the “six new virtues” have been chosen. Xiao Qunzhong (ibid., 359) is only able to find a partial “pedigree” in Sun Yat-sen’s writings, in which he presented an eight-character set of four virtues: loyalty and filial piety, benevolence, trustworthiness (or honesty) and righteousness, and peacefulness.¹⁸ His set was meant to replace the eight-character phrase representing the orthodox Neo-Confucianism of the Song Dynasty, which included filial piety, brotherly submission, loyalty, trustworthiness, propriety, justice, integrity, and the sense of shame. Later in the 1930s, the nationalist government began propagating a new set, which combined both the four virtues listed by Sun and the last four virtues from the Neo-Confucian list (ibid.).

Compared to Sun Yat-sen’s list, Xi Jinping’s set has dispensed with loyalty and filial piety, while peacefulness has been broken down into harmony on the one hand, and seeking the Universal Commonwealth on the other. Loyalty (to the ruler) has perhaps been replaced by keeping the people’s best at heart, which sounds more democratic, while not overlooking the fact that the people in the People’s Republic are supposedly represented by the Party. Filial piety, probably considered a feudal concept, has been replaced by China’s new mantra since Hu Jintao – harmony.

The presence of the ancient concept of the Universal Commonwealth is not as surprising as it might seem because Mao Zedong had made *Datong* synonymous with the Communist utopia, an age of both peace and equality, even though he otherwise condemned Confucianism as the core of everything rotten and reactionary. It is also noteworthy that the Chinese word for ‘peacefulness’ or ‘peace’, *heping* (和平), is a modern compound and carries connotations of both harmony and evenness (while evenness refers both to stability and equality) (Motoh 2015, 101–106, 110–111). The connection between these ideas and the socialist core values, however, remains unclear. No matter how much the Party pays lip service to the importance of tradition, the Party doctrine and Confucianism continue to exist in two parallel universes that do not seem to be merging.

3.2 China’s world view and the *Tianxia* ideal

The Communist Party designated the promotion of cultural development and the elevation of China’s cultural soft power as one of the priorities in the 12th Five-Year Plan for 2011–2015 (Xinhua.com 2010). This followed the rise of China’s hard power, and the Party-state has been keen to construct a new strategic narrative which legitimizes

17 In Chinese: 讲仁爱、重民本、守诚信、崇正义、尚和合、求大同。

18 This set is also mentioned in my third essay (Kallio 2015b, 525), where I quote Liu Mingfu. In Chinese: 忠孝、仁爱、信义、和平。

China's position as a world leader also from the soft power perspective. A country's narrative can be regarded as a reflection of its leaders' world view. According to Kim (1993b, 10), a world view could be said to constitute the most constant level of input into China's foreign policy decision-making process. However, a world view can be an artificial construct, reflecting the current needs and trends of its time and its creators. This doctoral dissertation illustrates that the project to outline a Chinese orientation to world politics is part of the efforts to legitimize China's foreign policy actions, at least in the short term.

As already stated, the key concept of the newly constructed Chinese world view is *Tianxia*, All Under Heaven. Through this concept, the Communist Party aims to assert that China's foreign policy goal is harmony on a global scale, just as it claims to promote harmony within China. Unfortunately, the definition of harmony is far from straightforward. It can refer to accepting differences while opposing conformity, as well as calmness within society and keeping within the bounds of propriety. Harmony also needs to be maintained, sometimes even with force, which is the reason why Ford (2014) sees Chinese-style harmony as fundamentally opposed to Western liberalism.

From a non-Chinese point of view, it can be argued that "All Under Heaven" may become accepted by other nations only if one abandons the principle of the centre, which was originally the Chinese Emperor himself. Some Chinese thinkers, like Yan Xuetong (2006; 2011, 39–64), have tried to overcome this by emphasizing the differentiation between a "true", benevolent king (or emperor) and a hegemonic king. In the classical texts, the former are said to follow the "Kingly Way", *wangdao* (王道). The ensuing logic is that a unified *Tianxia* system, while requiring the existence of a centre, need not be a hegemonic one. The benevolence and morality of a "true king" was a kind of soft power, remarks Li Cunshan (2012, 13), quoting ancient thinker Dong Zhongshu (179–104 BCE): "A (true) king exerts his caring even to the barbarians of the four compass points, whereas a (tyrannical) hegemon only exerts his caring to the vassal lords under him".

However, Li notes that Wang Chong, who lived over a century after Dong, balanced soft and hard power by noting that morality was not enough in ruling a country, just as strength was not enough in subjugating the enemy.¹⁹ Furthermore, as noted by many scholars, the Kingly Way is also a hegemony of sorts (see Peng 2013). How else would "those who are far off (become) attracted" (the *Analects* XIII.16, cited in Legge 1972, 269) and acknowledge the superiority of the benevolent king? It might not be hegemony through force, but rather akin to soft power, but it is hegemony nonetheless. This adds clout to Ford's claim that the world as envisioned by the Chinese Communist Party is a challenger to the prevailing liberalist order. In parallel, the discussion in China tends to stress the fundamental difference between the *Tianxia* ideal and the Westphalian system which, according to the Chinese interpretation, merely signifies a loose collection of states driven by their own national interests.

Of course, China is a member of the United Nations and has thus accepted the Westphalian system in practice. Furthermore, the prevailing doctrine in China is still

19 The quotation by Dong Zhongshu originates from *Chunqiu Fanlu*: "Ren yi fa" 1, as reprinted in Sturgeon, ed., 2011. The quotation by Wang Chong originates from *Lunheng*: "Fei Han" 10, as reprinted in Sturgeon, ed., 2011.

that of National Salvation, which in Chinese refers to saving the *guo*, the state. The state and its unity are central to the Communist Party's historical narrative. What makes the contradiction with the doctrine of National Salvation and the alleged adherence to the ideal of *Tianxia* even more glaring is the cultural exceptionalism which shrouds the concept of the state, the *guo*. This is amusingly reflected in the inability of many Chinese people to see themselves as foreigners — in Chinese, *waiguoren* (外國人), 'people from outside the *guo*' — abroad, because in the popular mindset, *guo* refers to China alone, and the Chinese are therefore always "people from inside the *guo*" no matter where they are. Conceptually, there is only one *guo* in the world for the Chinese.

There being only one *guo* in the world also means that there can only be one China. This is not only the official position of the Party-state but also that of a large part, if not the vast majority, of the Chinese people (Chublic Opinion 2016). Indeed, the real litmus test for harmony and China's real willingness to challenge the Westphalian system is related to the Taiwan Issue: As long as the Party-state does not give up the military option for "reunifying" China, there is no reason to believe that China is ready to abandon its doctrine of National Salvation and move beyond the nation-state-based Westphalian system. Therefore, as long as the Party-state insists on annexation or amalgamation being the only possible solutions to the Taiwan Issue, their *Tianxia* ideal is nothing but empty rhetoric. The same conclusion must correspondingly be drawn vis-à-vis all the other undertakings by the Party-state to place China's traditional culture, Traditional Learning, or Confucianism at the core of Chinese soft power. They cannot be deemed genuine until proven otherwise by concrete changes in policies and action.

3.3 Utilitarian justice and pragmatic interests

Considering the liberal and often uncritical usage of the central traditional concepts and categories in diverse official and semi-official contexts against the background of the inconsistencies in their semantic usages, and their varying interpretations in different frames of reference or by different schools of thought, it is tempting to see their implementation as nothing more than instrumental.

The instrumental character of the dissemination of traditional values in the official rhetoric is clearly demonstrated in the commentaries regarding what is being presented as the core principle of Xi Jinping's foreign policy, namely "the correct handling of justice and interests". This is discussed in the last two essays forming this dissertation (Kallio 2015b & 2015c). In Chinese, 'justice' and 'interests' are *yi* (義) and *li* (利), respectively. *Li* can also be translated as 'benefits' or 'profit'. The idea that foreign relations should be guided by a correct handling of justice and interests (or benefits) has been promulgated in many authoritative articles. In my essays, I state that Foreign Minister Wang Yi maintains that achieving a proper balance between justice and interests has always been a key trend in Chinese tradition. This is something of a misreading, and Wang has actually called for giving priority to justice (Wang 2014, 27). While his message is in unison with Confucian thought, which stresses that when one is offered benefits, one must consider whether they are justified or not, there are other interpretations which diverge from this idealist understanding and reveal a more

nuanced approach, which reflects the application of the “correct handling of justice and interests” in a more realistic manner.

An author on the online discussion forum of the Party’s theoretical magazine *Qiusbi* commented that Confucianism is not about negating interests, and in a market economy one cannot concentrate on justice alone. The abovementioned author called for getting rid of the passivating aspects of the Confucian approach, which puts too much emphasis on justice (Chen 2013). Ye Zicheng, a prominent scholar from Peking University, has argued that even when seen from a traditional Confucian viewpoint, justice and interests should not be considered extreme opposites. In his view, this supports the fact that a country cannot abandon its core interests, meaning that China should neither act blindly in accordance with some abstract principles, nor concentrate on its own profit or external fame. Instead, one should understand that what is right for China is the appropriate and timely course of action in any given situation (Ye 2014).²⁰ Another view regards “interests” as economic interests and “justice” as political and security interests. This means that sacrificing interests for the sake of justice does not imply putting the greater good of the global community above China’s own needs but, on the contrary, that economic interests can be abandoned for the sake of national security (Xu & Du 2015, 277–278). In the light of these views, the correct handling of justice and benefits translates into a pragmatic, utilitarian foreign policy: China will safeguard its core interests and push for an international system that is more just, namely less unipolar.

20 The ensuing logic here is that in etymological dictionaries *yi* is traditionally explained through its homonym 宜, which refers to what is appropriate: when man does what he ought to do, that is right.

4 Discussion

4.1 General implications

The editor of the Communist Party organ *Renmin Ribao* (“the People’s Daily”), Yang Kai, wrote in an editorial on 19 February, 2016, entitled “China’s rise will bring the world positive energy”²¹:

How to regard China’s rise? ... First of all, China’s ideals transmit the positive energy of peaceful development. The thought of promoting ‘harmony but not conformity’ present in ancient Chinese philosophy, as well as the concept of ‘the commonwealth of the destiny of mankind’ given prominence by President Xi Jinping, or more concretely, the emphasis on ‘no conflict and no confrontation’ in the new type of great power relations between China and the United States, as well as the principles of ‘closeness, sincerity, benevolence and inclusiveness’ followed in China’s peripheral diplomacy or the prominence of ‘peace’ in ‘the four major partnerships’²² between China and Europe — all of these reflect the nature of China as a nation striving for peace. Just as President Xi Jinping remarked in his speech at the Körber-Stiftung in Germany, 2014: To say that China follows the road of peaceful development is not opportunistic trickery nor diplomatic rhetoric, but instead a conclusion based on an objective assessment of our history, the realities and the future; it is the organic amalgamation of our ideological self-confidence and practical self-awareness (Yang 2016).

The same newspaper published another editorial on 20 February, 2016 by Xiong Jian, entitled “Tell the tale of China effectively in order to better connect with the world”, in which the writer complains that China has been beaten when weak and vilified when strong, and infers that the only way to remedy the situation is to improve the manner in which China projects its image to the outside world. The writer quotes Xi Jinping, who has said that “having a good narrative makes any task half accomplished”. The editorial does not sketch out China’s narrative but contends that there is a lot to work on: “The Chinese way, the Chinese miracle, China’s accomplishments, the Chinese spirit, Chinese values and China’s strength demonstrate how there are myriad elements and an endless stream of materials for a good story” (Xiong 2016).²³

21 In Chinese, ‘positive energy’ is *zhengnengliang* (正能量). It is a catchphrase allegedly popularized in China by Xi Jinping and Wang Qishan and originating from the works of British psychologist Richard Wiseman. *Zhengnengliang* is the Chinese translation of Wiseman’s book entitled *The Luck Factor*, in which the author argues that luck is not fate but can be learned by creating chance opportunities and thinking positively.

22 Sino-European partnerships in peace, growth, reform and the progress of civilization.

23 In Chinese, the word for ‘tale’, ‘story’ or ‘narrative’ is invariably *gushi* (故事).

All the essays forming this dissertation, viewed separately and as a whole, take issue with the statements presented in the above-mentioned editorials. Has China always adopted the role of peaceful development? What is China's self-awareness like? Is there a "Chinese way"? What are the Chinese values? How should harmony be interpreted? Where does the idea of the commonwealth of destiny come from? How is the story of China being formulated? All of these questions, among others, are discussed in this dissertation in the hope that finding some answers would shed light on the processes that may lead to the formulation of a new, strategic narrative for China.

The Chinese leadership desire their country to be seen simultaneously as a rising power destined for greatness, and as an inherently peaceful, Confucian beacon of civilization. The strategic narrative will therefore also be a subjective description of China's role. As a manifestation of this role, China adheres to the principle of non-interference and is resolutely against all attempts to interfere in the internal matters of any sovereign nation. However, there are signs that it is becoming increasingly difficult for China to maintain this role. Its own interests overseas are increasing at a fast rate, and it is easy to imagine a situation where China would be forced to interfere in the matters of another state to protect its own interests. This means that the historical narrative behind China's identity may have to be modified accordingly, perhaps underlining that while China has interfered in other countries' affairs on occasion, it has always done so differently from the colonial powers, namely for altruistic and not for hegemonistic reasons.

Furthermore, pursuing the *Tianxia* ideal to its logical conclusion would mean relinquishing the goal of unification with Taiwan as a nation-state. Indeed, it may be that the present-day official insistence on clinging to unity could at least partly be due to a "rhetorical trap", into which the Chinese leaders have fallen in their effort to build their own legitimacy upon unity, and from which they are now unable to extricate themselves. At the present time, there clearly exists a "correct" national narrative which dictates how China should be defined as a state and a nation. The main exhibition in the Museum of History in Beijing concentrates solely on showing a consistent trend towards a multi-national, unified state in Chinese history. It stands as an example of how the ideal of Grand Unity has been artificially kept alive and deliberately interpreted falsely. The narrative legitimizing the rule of the Communist Party gives the Party credit for ending the humiliating war with Japan 70 years ago. The Party therefore has to continue along that same path, safeguarding China's unity and stability, if it wants to remain in power. According to Dessein (2014, 59), "contemporary political historiography connects the mission of the unified Chinese-state to inherited politico-religious narratives".

The insistence on the dogma of unity is a reflection of the weakness of the state in China, as paradoxical as this may sound when talking of a one-Party dictatorship. The Party may be strong, but the nation-state is not. Historically, what we understand by 'China' today – a unified state with an area equal to that of Europe and inhabited by the Chinese – is a recent construct dating back no more than two centuries. China has been characterized as "a civilization trying to squeeze itself into the form of a nation-state" (Pye 1992, 235–236). Nation-building is still a work in progress. It is therefore theoretically possible, albeit not probable in the foreseeable future, that the Party-state will try to find a way out of the rhetorical trap of its own making and welcome

interpretations based on softer, civilization-based forms of unity. This would possibly be partly a result of mounting external pressures if China continues to advocate its *Tianxia* model in international relations research. Signs of such a change are not yet visible, and whether they will ever present themselves is another question which can only be answered with time.

We are currently witnessing the era of Xi Jinping, and all indications point to clinging onto the old doctrines instead of experimenting with new ones. While Xi's constant quotations of classical, often Confucian, sources have been interpreted even as a sign that the Communist Party is turning into a "Confucian Party", it is most likely all just a ruse. It is doubtful whether Xi has really invented anything new. For example, his "new" foreign policy concepts originate from the speeches of his predecessors, but the way in which they are currently accredited to Xi himself seems to be an orchestrated effort to bolster his authority as China's supreme leader (Kallio 2016a). In effect, he has simply combined a Maoist anti-American and anti-hegemonic rant with Confucian sayings to please the conservative and patriotic public. When the climate is becoming increasingly uncertain both domestically and internationally, the public also wants to see a sagacious man in charge. If such a person does not exist, he has to be created.

Again, only history can deliver the final verdict on Xi Jinping's leadership. However, it seems likely that the optimistic future view of Michael Schoenhals (1992, 29) is still only wishful thinking: "One may ... expect to see a de-emphasis on formalized language in the PRC in the future, once the leaders who presume that a single formulation can make the difference between national salvation and national decline have passed from the scene". The realization of Xi's Chinese Dream is, in essence, the completion of National Salvation, and until that goal has been reached, the formulations of the dogma must surely be carefully deliberated so that unity and stability remain solid.

With regard to unity, it is possible that there are differing opinions within the Communist Party, as well as within other relevant State institutions, about the ideological formulations. It is improbable that all the important players would have a similar view on the role of tradition and traditional values, for example. Further research would be needed to crack open the black box of the party-state in order to see how factionalism affects the processes relating to the formation of the Chinese way.

Leaving these questions open for the future serves to illustrate the main premise of this dissertation: Chinese traditional schools of thought, and how their teachings are interpreted, will not be merely of theoretical interest, but will impact the practices in China both externally and internally, with far-reaching repercussions. The formulation of China's new national identity is comparable to gene technology, where genes are not only studied but manipulated to form a new kind of creature. It is important to try to envision the characteristics of that creature in advance because China is fast becoming an increasingly powerful player in the world, also in regard to setting global rules and standards.

4.2 The revival of tradition and auto-Orientalization

The revival of tradition in general and Confucianism in particular has been discussed in recent years by Arif Dirlik (2011), John Makeham (2011), Ralph Weber (2015) and Dessein (2015). Dirlik and Makeham both discuss the demarcation and definition of *guoxue*, and both emphasize the particularistic or culturalistic motivation behind the revival of the traditional Chinese schools of thought, which puts such a revival in opposition to Eurocentrism and universal values. Ford (2014) shares this assessment, and regards it as a result of a conscious effort by the Party-state:

In response to its internal challenges of legitimacy, one might say – including its persisting fear of ideational subversion from the “spiritual pollution” of political ideals associated with the West – the Chinese Party-State has increasingly “Orientalized” itself and its political discourse. This *auto-Orientalization* has, in turn, given rise to a curious cadre of Confucio-authoritarian cheerleaders, for as it has progressed, a group of academics and public intellectuals has emerged in China to advance this discourse still further – and to make more explicit and self-aware the quasi-Confucian themes already prominent in the CCP’s modern legitimacy narrative (Ford 2014).

With the modern legitimacy narrative, Ford is referring to a “new quasi-Confucian political discourse of a technocratically-guided but civilizationally-grounded national unity and strength” (Ford 2014). Ford’s judgement is in line with the conclusions of this dissertation research. However, it disregards the possibility of a genuine grass-roots interest towards the revival tradition, possibly taking on different forms than what the Party-state is promoting. This possibility has been discussed in the first essay of this dissertation in particular (Kallio 2011).

Focusing on Confucianism, both Weber and Dessein also emphasize the instrumentalist nature of the “so-called embrace of Confucianism by the Party” (Weber 2015, 185). Furthermore, both argue that the Confucian revival as a bottom-up process has been greatly overestimated. As Weber (186) concludes: “I believe that a substantial revival of Confucianism that would impact the societal or political realm is merely wishful thinking on behalf of the Confucian scholars and other actors (with or without a political agenda of their own) and non-Confucian scholars who study Confucian scholars and their invention”. Dessein (2015, 193) refers to an interesting distinction between two perceived forms of Confucianism in the Qing era, namely pro “state Confucianism” (*junxue*, 君學), which was used to legitimize the government’s rule, and pro “radical Confucianism” (*guoxue*, 國學), which was a form of moral teaching critical of political and social injustice.²⁴ Dessein (2015) leads the reader to understand that *guoxue*, Traditional Learning, including Confucianism promoted by the Party-state today, follows the statist tradition.

Torbjörn Lodén (2006, 187) points out that “Confucianism has been used as a tool by political leaders to legitimize their rule but also as a weapon in the hands of critics

24 The *jun* (君) in *junxue* refers to ‘ruler’. Dessein (2015, 193) contains an error mixing *guoxue* with *junxue* and vice versa.

and reformers”. He cautions against asking too simple questions. While it is customary to ponder whether Confucianism as such is essentially a conservative or a dynamic force, one should perhaps focus on how people choose to interpret Confucian ideas and the roles they assign to them (ibid., 191). After all, in the words of Lodén, Confucianism can be described as “a continuous discussion on some fundamental questions concerning the human predicament” (ibid.).

This dissertation is an example of a “non-Confucian scholar” studying the phenomenon called the rise of Confucianism, and while concurring with the instrumentalist nature of the Party-state’s campaign to promote tradition, it refrains from delivering a definitive verdict on the future of “radical Confucianism” in China. Rather, that is an issue that should be readdressed after some years. Perhaps the “Confucian fever” will die out together with the related political campaign — after all, all political campaigns in China have had a limited lifespan — but the phenomena are various and the actors multiple, which is why the issue is best referred to future research.

Nevertheless, the revival of tradition — regardless of whether it is seen as a state-run or grass-roots project, or both — has practical implications for many aspects of Chinese society, including the discussion in China about democracy, human rights, and the rule of law, even though the essays forming this dissertation focus mainly on the field of China’s foreign policy. On the other hand, examining the discussion related to the rule of law in China offers more examples of the trend of auto-Orientalization in the different Chinese discourses.

4.3 Relevance to the rule of law in China

The top-down process of reviving tradition in China may, if successful, result in the emergence of a new set of philosophical values, which may be reflected even in the language of the law and legal concepts, all of which will influence the development of China’s legal culture. Therefore, seen from the wider perspective of comparative law, it is important to examine the issue of the roots of the law, and to study the interdependency and reciprocity between the law and culture in the Chinese context.²⁵ One particular aspect is the apparent difficulty of introducing the concepts of the rule of law and rule by law into the Chinese language in an unambiguous manner.

As mentioned in the fourth essay (Kallio 2015c), Professor Ye Zicheng (2013) from Peking University has coined the term *Huaxia zhuyi* (華夏主義), ‘Chinese-ism’²⁶ to refer to a combination of traditional schools of thought which he believes should form the basis of government in China. He suggests that China should endorse the Taoist “natural” way of government, the Confucian “people-centred” government, and the Legalist “law-based” government. Furthermore, Ye (2014) believes that Xi Jinping is already putting such a combination into practice. In Ye’s analysis, Xi’s personal take on China’s legal framework is based on a Legalist School understanding of society.

The Legalist School, which promoted punishments and rewards as the most effective way of keeping subjects in hand, was favoured by the founder of the Qin Dynasty, who

25 Related issues are extensively discussed in Husa 2015, 29–48.

26 *Huaxia* refers to the Chinese cultural sphere.

found the ideas useful in forming the first unified empire in China in 221 BCE. Shang Yang, a Legalist scholar and statesman who lived a century before the Qin Dynasty, stated: “Punishments create force, force creates strength, strength creates awe, awe creates mercy (of the ruler); thus mercy (of the ruler) has its origin in force” (*Shang jun shu*, “Qu qiang” 8, as reprinted in Sturgeon, ed., 2011). Ye (2014) notes that in 2006, Xi quoted Shang Yang: “All states have laws but there is no law that forces the people to obey them”. This means that laws alone are not enough and need to be guided by a higher principle or actor. As Shang Yang wrote, the disorder in a country is not the fault of the laws being in disorder, it is just that the laws are inadequate in general.²⁷

This view chimes with China’s official aim of promoting “a socialist Rule of Law with Chinese characteristics”, which basically means that the Communist Party will remain above the law and play the role of the higher actor guiding the laws. The Constitution of the People’s Republic (Article 1) stipulates that China “is a socialist state under the people’s democratic dictatorship led by the working class”. That is something quite different from constitutionalism. *Hongqi Wengao*, a Party-run theoretical magazine, published an article in October 2014 accusing the promoters of constitutional rule of renouncing the class struggle. The article warned of replacing the people’s democratic dictatorship with the rule of law, stating that this would be falling into the trap of “universal values”, and would play into the hands of international capital but be detrimental to the Chinese people (QStheory.cn 2014). On the eve of the Fourth Plenum, the *Global Times* (2014b) declared that “China must chart its own course to the rule of law”. The Communiqué of the Plenum states: “The leadership of the Party and the Socialist rule of law are identical, the Socialist rule of law must persist in the leadership of the Party, the leadership of the Party must rely on the Socialist rule of law” (Xinhuanet 2014).

The phrase used for the rule of law in China already in itself contains a deviation from the internationally accepted understanding, which stresses the accountability under the law of all government or private entities and individuals, as well as judicial independence and adherence to international human rights standards (UNSC 2004). The Chinese phrase, *yi fa zhi guo* (依法治國), translates literally as ‘to rule the country according to law’, or ‘rule by law’, which lacks the “rule under law” aspects mentioned above.²⁸ In addition, *yi fa zhi guo* is often abbreviated to *fazhi* (法治) in Chinese parlance, which stresses the difference between the rule of law and the rule of man (in Chinese *renzhi*, 人治).²⁹ According to the *Global Times* (2014c), in an article on the Fourth Plenum, “China was stubbornly influenced by thousands of years of ‘the rule of man’, and the remnants are still impacting modern ruling mechanisms”. Today, *renzhi* refers not only to the Emperor’s rule in history, but also to the kind of unlimited power which Mao Zedong and Deng Xiaoping were still able to wield before the Party started promoting collective rule and inner-Party democracy.

27 The original text can be found in *Shangjun shu*, “Huace” 3, as reprinted in Sturgeon, ed., 2011.

28 *Yi fa zhi guo* was previously written homonymically as 以法治國, literally ‘utilising law to rule the country’, which is even more clearly a synonym for rule by law.

29 *Fazhi* (法治) also stands in contrast to its homonym (法制), which means ‘legal system’ or ‘rule by law’.

However, the differentiation between the rule of law and the rule of man is muddled by the Party-state's stated goal of integrating the former with rule by virtue. The Communiqué of the Fourth Plenum of the 18th Central Committee of the Communist Party of China (Xinhua.com 2014) brings together Xi Jinping's reform policies and the project to revive tradition: "We ... must persist in the integration of ruling the country according to the law (*yi fa zhi guo*) and ruling the country by virtue (*yi de zhi guo*, 以德治國) ...".³⁰ The latter part of the phrase reeks of Confucian political ideals, which presented rule by sagacious men as the most desirable, albeit rare, state of affairs. According to the Confucians, virtue was a more effective tool in government than laws. The *Analects* records that Confucius said: "If you guide the commoners with directives and constrain them with punishments, they will try to avoid getting into trouble but have no sense of shame. If you guide them with virtue and constrain them with propriety, they will have a sense of shame and mend their ways" ("Wei zheng" 3, as reprinted in Sturgeon, ed., 2011).

Li Buyun from the Chinese Academy of Social Sciences explains that from the viewpoint of the Legalist school, there is nothing wrong with rule by sagacious men as such; the problem is that genuine sages appear only once in a millennium. This was also pointed out by Sun Yat-sen, the father of the Chinese Republic, in his critique against imperial rule (Li 2015, 7–9). And naturally, the kind of Confucian thinking which the quotation above reflects is not foreign to Communist indoctrination either, and has been manifested in the public shaming of dissidents and political opponents. The Party now seems to be creating space for rule by virtue, just in case. Seen against the clear signs of a personality cult being constructed around Xi, this opens the door for speculation on the nature of Xi's ambitions. Ye Zicheng (2014) stopped short of calling Xi a sagacious leader by presenting his leadership as the embodiment of the best values of China's traditional schools of thought (Ye 2014).

There is a new catchphrase in the field of legal studies – "China rests on the principles of rule of/by law" (*fazhi Zhongguo*, 法治中國).³¹ This is accredited to Xi Jinping himself (Jiang 2015, 3), and serves as another recent example of the personification of the Communist Party's principally collective leadership in Xi Jinping. According to Professor Jiang Ming'an from Peking University, Xi Jinping's *fazhi Zhongguo* consists of four distinct elements: the state, the government, the society, and the ruling party, which must all rest on the principles of rule of/by law (Jiang 2015, "Qianyan", 3–11). In regard to the Communist Party, Jiang says, its role is to lead the overall development of the country and to coordinate the different demands of different actors within the state and society. *Fazhi* in terms of the Party refers to its internal ability to act in a manner which guarantees its legitimacy by avoiding arbitrary decisions and taking heed of the political and economic realities (Jiang 2015, "Qianyan", 9–10). Therefore, when the Party says it wants to promote *fazhi* in China, it is simply referring to a collective government supported by a solid legal system with the caveat that Xi Jinping is currently at the core of the collective.

30 In the official translation (China Copyright and Media 2014), "by virtue" reads as "according to virtue".

31 The translation of *fazhi Zhongguo* differs in various sources. Sometimes it is rendered as 'China ruled by law', sometimes as 'Rule of Law China'.

In light of the Party's aforementioned goal to rule the country by integrating law and virtue, China's legal culture, as well as the political discourse of the Party in general, can also be characterized as a form of "auto-Orientalization". For political purposes, the Chinese leadership is downplaying the European roots of the country's legal culture, even though the modern Chinese legal language is heavily influenced by European and American models.³² Instead, the Party is putting emphasis on the "indigenous" elements, or rather an essentialized understanding of them. This understanding perceives the Confucian moral code and the rule of man as having been superior to law in the field of governance during the imperial era, while in reality the rulers still relied on the principles of Legalism due to their practical value, even though Confucianism was at the same time the orthodox state ideology.³³ Therefore, imperial rule is commonly characterized as "Legalism under the guise of Confucianism".

Following a similar logic, Xi Jinping's idea of *fazhi* could be dubbed "legalism in the guise of the rule of law". Xi is promoting the rule of law instead of the rule of man, but at the same time the Party and its core leadership are allowed to continue controlling all aspects of society, including the judicial organs, and the Party is furthermore flirting with the idea of rule by virtue, which belongs to the same Confucian tradition as the rule of man. Hence, it is difficult to draw any conclusion other than that the Socialist Rule of Law with Chinese Characteristics is just another moniker for the single-party dictatorship, similar to the "people's democratic dictatorship", and that talk of rule by virtue is just another attempt to appease the population by presenting a culturally familiar image of a strong, sagacious man at the helm.

4.4 Towards China's strategic narrative

It is hypothesized in this dissertation that the Chinese leadership is currently composing a new strategic narrative to legitimize their chosen policy paths both inside China and in the international arena. While nothing resembling a strategic narrative has been publicized as yet, there are signs of its being formulated in the rhetoric related to China's rise, the Chinese Dream, and China's emerging international role.

A strategic narrative for China would need to describe where China is going, how it will get there, and what kind of happy ending will emerge at the destination. The building blocks for such a narrative must include something old and something new but, unlike wedding attire, preferably nothing borrowed. Due to the trend of auto-Orientalization, if anything is borrowed it must at least be "with Chinese characteristics". The new has already been formulated as the great rejuvenation of the Chinese nation. The old is China's Traditional Learning, the supposed amalgamation of China's traditional wisdom.

The prominent, critical-Marxist philosopher Li Zehou has coined the term *shiyong lixing* (實用理性), perhaps best translated as 'pragmatic rationality', which he and others have presented as China's "national wisdom", the most profound mental construct

32 The relation between language and the law is highlighted in Husa 2015, 46–48.

33 The processes of orientalizing the Chinese legal culture both at home and abroad are comprehensively examined in Ruskola 2012, 179–234.

affecting the Chinese culture (Li 1994, Liu X. 2012). The term refers to the alleged Chinese tradition of objective, practical and results-oriented deliberation preceding action. According to Li, pragmatic rationality can be partly seen as a positivist-realist world view, but it also includes the understanding that practical results are not the sole standard of human behaviour. Li explains that traditional Confucians believed that they had a mission to cultivate their person morally, reaching ‘inner sageliness’ (*neisheng*, 內聖), and then to work for the betterment of society in the spirit of ‘outward kingliness’ (*waiwang*, 外王). While laudable, the emotionality of the mission has often led to a fanatical fixation on ideas, oftentimes to National Salvation, and at other times to patriotism, science, or democracy. The problem with these quasi-religious fanatics is the merger of politics and creed (*zheng-jiao heyi*, 政教合一), which Li finds deplorable. He famously accuses National Salvation of having suppressed enlightenment in China (Li 1994).

Li attests that ethics should not be subordinate to politics, and believes that moral principles were traditionally based on the Way of Heaven (*Tiandao*, 天道). Li understands Heaven partly as the laws of nature, but also as something akin to a supernatural force. He recalls how Confucius, otherwise rational, swore by Heaven (Li 1994, 152–153). Li seems to agree with those Song and Ming dynasty Neo-Confucians who regarded the *li* (理; ‘rationale’) as man’s moral nature, and believed that it reflected the *li* of Heaven (*Tianli*, 天理; ‘rationale of Heaven’, usually translated as ‘Heavenly principle’). Good behaviour was considered to be in accordance with the Heavenly principle (Lodén 2006, 114; Kallio 2014, 270).

In Li’s view, the Way of Heaven is what is needed to restrain politics. He wants the merger of politics and creed to be replaced by the unity of Heaven and man (*Tian-ren heyi*, 天人合一).³⁴ In essence, his pragmatic rationality would ideally mean a pragmatic adherence to the rationale of Heaven. Similar views have also been expressed by Professor Liu Xiaoying from the University of International Relations (Beijing), who is concerned that pragmatic rationality has a tendency to turn into utilitarianism. In his view, God was invented in the West for the purpose of restraining politics, and China would need to have something similar (Liu 2012, 114). Despite Li’s strong doubts about the so-called Contemporary New Confucians’ metaphysically oriented thinking and its applicability to modern, democratic societies (Li 1994, 158), both he and Liu seem to imply that a new basis for morality — a basis which is stronger than politics and more permanent than mere utilitarian values — could be found in the intrinsic moral conviction promoted by traditional Confucians.

In the light of those assessments deeming the revival of Confucianism as either a party-state-controlled project or as not having enough strength as a bottom-up process, it does not seem very likely that the defects of pragmatic rationalism can be mended. National Salvation has for a century been the end that has justified the means as China’s creed. The tides of time do not seem to have changed course in that regard. If anything, China is heading towards intensified ideological indoctrination. The new strategic narrative may well end up being one of the “holy scriptures” of China’s reinforced political religion. That remains to be seen, however, because China still lacks a

34 Furthermore, Li Zehou promotes the Neo-Confucian ideal of striking a balance between one’s rationality and emotions (Li Zehou 2008, 203).

systematic road map of how the traditional Chinese values are going to be merged with the socialist ones, and thus turned into parts of China's strategic narrative.

While the key attributes of China's national/historical narrative, which has been created mainly for internal consumption, namely the doctrine of National Salvation and the dogma of unity, can be extracted from key speeches and documents, the composition of China's strategic narrative is still guesswork. It can be postulated that it will rest on the basis of the older narratives, that it will reflect the country's recent rise, and that it will be aimed not only at the domestic, but also at international audiences. This doctoral dissertation offers a sketch of some elements which are likely to become attributes of the strategic narrative. These include the Chinese Dream itself, the *Tianxia* ideal, and the denial of universal values (see Figure 6.2).

The Chinese Dream stands for the great rejuvenation of the Chinese nation, which is an organic amalgamation of the older narratives, China's national/historical narrative, and the Communist Party's narrative. The *Tianxia* ideal, which has become the key word in China's attempt to increase its soft power in the field of international relations, is the crystallization of China's traditional world view. The denial of universal values, which is a sort of mirror image of the *Tianxia* ideal, emphasizes the "indigenous" character of China's political system, something which the Communist Party has held dear all along, and which can be seen as a continuation of the Communist Party's anti-hegemonism.³⁵

While these elements can be considered to be likely candidates for attributes in China's strategic narrative in the light of this dissertation, the final composition and combination of attributes will only be revealed in time, and are a question for further research. Taking into account the two upcoming centennials — the centennial of the Communist Party in 2021 and the centennial of the People's Republic in 2049 — it seems likely that a new narrative, or parts thereof, will emerge in the coming years. After all, in the light of the continued emphasis on formalized language, an absence of major political declarations in the wake of preparing for such important celebrations would be quite unprecedented.

It is also likely that China will continue to send conflicting messages. While wanting to tell the world that China is inherently peaceful, the leadership must also keep reassuring the people that their country will not be humiliated again. We can therefore expect to see China's leaders alternately stressing China's role as a developing country and as a powerful economy, as a passive victim of colonial powers and as the historical leader of its own cultural sphere. Furthermore, there is no reason to expect that China will change its utilitarian approach to foreign policy. It is in line with pragmatic rationality that the Chinese leaders speak of harmony and justice as some sort of Heavenly principles of the *Tianxia* ideal, while doing what needs to be done in order to reach the results that must be reached in accordance with their subjectively objective deliberations.

35 Chairman Mao said in 1954: "We are opposed to big countries having special rights. ... The current situation in North and South America is like that of a medieval family, with the United States as the patriarch and the other countries as its nephews or juniors. We don't want this kind of relationship in Asia" (Mao 1998b, 146–147).

5 Summary

This doctoral dissertation, consisting of four, published peer-reviewed essays and this summarizing report, explores the Communist Party-led process to formulate a new, “strategic” narrative which endorses China’s status as a rising but peaceful superpower. A strategic narrative for China would need to describe where China is going, how it will get there, and what kind of happy ending will emerge at the destination. One fundament of such a narrative is China’s perceived national essence in the form of “Traditional Learning”, the supposed amalgamation of China’s ancient wisdom, which is currently enjoying a revival.

All the essays discuss different aspects of the same question: What is the role of the so-called revival of Traditional Learning in the formulation process of the narratives that the party-state uses in order to legitimize its rule and China’s position in the world? Understanding this process will be essential in delineating China’s changing national identity, both internally and externally. Traditional Chinese schools of thought, and how their teachings are interpreted, are therefore not merely of theoretical interest, but also reflect the practices in China both externally and internally, with far-reaching repercussions.

Through a critical reading of both contemporary policy sources and the classical texts quoted therein, the dissertation illustrates how the Party is instrumentalizing Traditional Learning, particularly Confucianism, by emphasizing only those virtues that serve its interests, such as loyalty to the state. The dissertation further questions the credibility of the historical narrative used to shape and substantiate the national identity. The dissertation concludes that despite the lip service the Party pays to the importance of tradition, the Party doctrine and Confucianism continue to exist in two parallel universes which do not seem to be merging.

Another fundament of the strategic narrative is the same as that which the Party builds its legitimacy on: Its role as the ultimate defender of China’s national integrity and dignity. This role arises from the humiliations inflicted on late imperial China by colonial powers. China’s current leading slogan, “the Chinese Dream”, is analogously said to mean the rejuvenation of the Chinese nation. This has strong foreign policy-related dimensions. China’s economic rise has led observers both inside and outside of China to start presenting evermore bolder visions of China’s rising political and military power in the global arena. Many scholars in China are suggesting that China’s growing role on the world stage on the one hand, and the revival of Traditional Learning in China on the other, should lead to the emergence of a Chinese, if not Confucian, international relations theory.

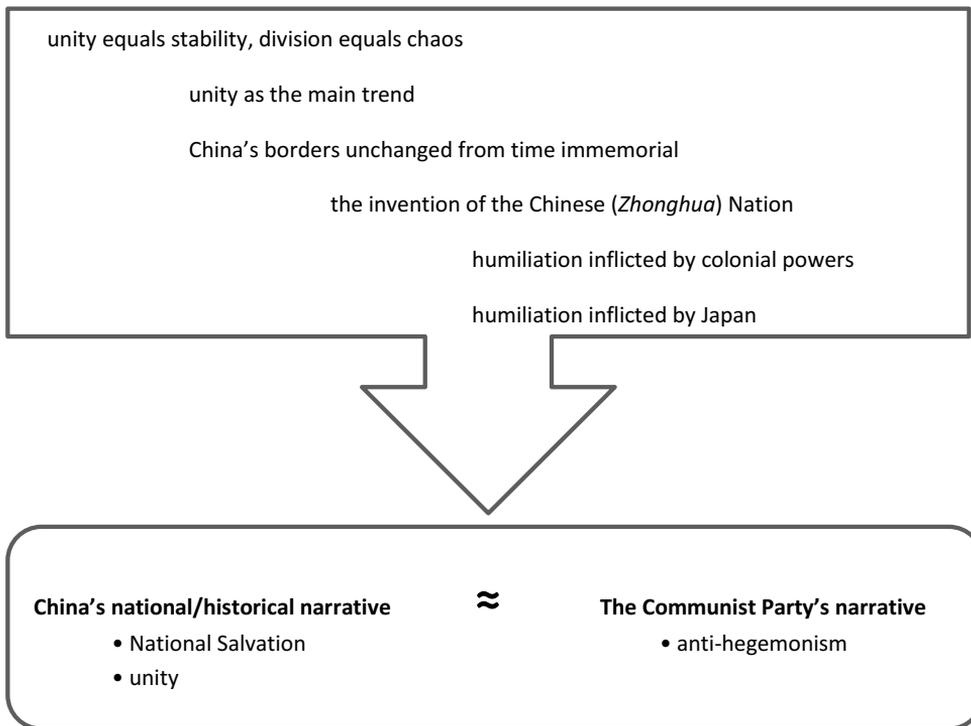
The abovementioned suggestions are the reason why the essays in this dissertation focus on the implications of the instrumentalization of Confucianism and the narrative formulation process in particular for China’s role as an international actor. The suggestions feed on Chinese traditional thinking about the political order, and their

aim is to give the Chinese leaders ideational tools for making China a challenger to the West, and ultimately to transform the structure of the existing international order. Hence, it is essential to understand the nature of the challenge and its roots. This dissertation concludes that no Confucian international relations model has emerged as yet, but elements of a Chinese world view, based on ancient ideals, are increasingly finding their way into the foreign policy rhetoric.

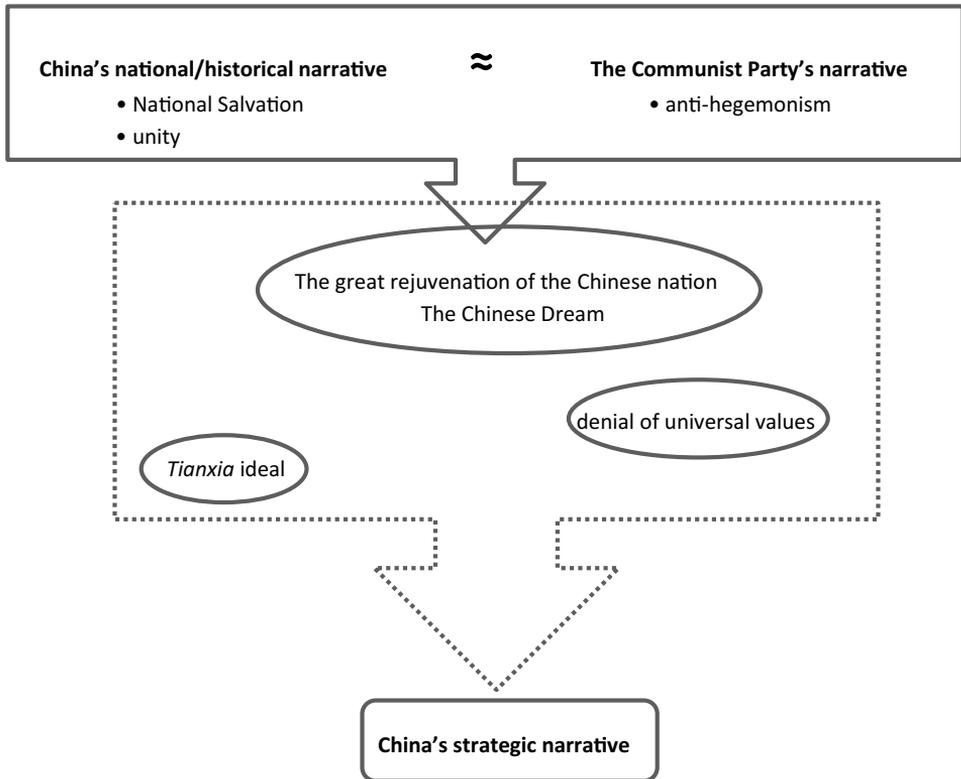
China's leaders utilize history and tradition in their rhetoric to emphasize the uniquely Chinese nature of their politics, and to rationalize their opposition to universal values and the perceived West-centrism of the international system. The top-down process of reviving tradition in China may result in the emergence of a new set of "indigenous" values, which can be reflected in many aspects of Chinese society, even in the development of the country's legal culture. The dissertation also briefly touches upon this issue and suggests that understanding the domestic historico-cultural context is crucial for decoding any societal phenomena in China.

6 Figures

6.1 The formation of China's national/historical narrative and the Communist Party's narrative



6.2 The formation of China's strategic narrative



7 References

- Aaltola, Mika. 2008. *Sowing the Seeds of Sacred: Political Religion of Contemporary World Politics and American Era*. Leiden: Brill.
- Aggestam, Lisbeth. 1999. "Role Conceptions and the Politics of Identity in Foreign Policy". ARENA Working Papers, WP 99/8. University of Oslo, *ARENA Centre for European Studies* website. https://www.sv.uio.no/arena/english/research/publications/arena-publications/workingpapers/working-papers1999/wp99_8.htm, 10 March 2016.
- Ai, Jiawen. 2008. "The Refunctioning of Confucianism: The Mainland Chinese Intellectual Response to Confucianism since the 1980s". *Issues & Studies* 44, no. 2 (June 2008): 29–78.
- Barmé, Geremie R. 2011. "Reviews: Speaking to History: The Story of King Goujian in Twentieth Century China by Paul A. Cohen". *Harvard Journal of Asiatic Studies*, Vol. 71, No. 2 (2011): 351–364.
- Beck, Mansvelt. 1986. "The Fall of Han". *The Cambridge History of China: Volume I: The Ch'in and Han Empires, 221 B.C. –A.D. 220*. Ed. by Denis Twitchett and Michael Loewe. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Chen Xiuping 陈秀平. 2013. "Rujia de 'yi-liguan' jiqi dangdai jiazhi" 儒家的“义利观”及其当代价值. *Qiusi Lilun Wang*, 8 November, 2013. http://www.qstheory.cn/zl/bkxj/201311/t20131108_288633.htm, 10 December 2014.
- Chublic Opinion. 2016. "Subculture hegemony". *Chublic Opinion* blog, 9 February 2016. <http://chublicopinion.com/2016/02/09/subculture-hegemony/>, 15 February 2016.
- Dessein, Bart. 2014. "Faith and Politics: (New) Confucianism as Civil Religion". *Asian Studies II* (XVIII), 1 (2014): 39–64.
- Dessein, Bart. 2015. "Contending for the Truth: Confucianism in the Contemporary PRC". In Rošker & Visočnik (ed.) 2015: 191–212.
- Dirlik, Arif. 2011. "Guoxue/National Learning in the Age of Global Modernity". *China Perspectives*, No. 2011/1: 4–13.
- Dittmer, Lowell & Samuel S. Kim (ed.). 1993a. *China's Quest for National Identity*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press.
- Dittmer, Lowell & Samuel S. Kim. 1993b. "In Search of a Theory of National Identity". In Dittmer & Kim 1993a (ed.): 1–31.
- Dittmer, Lowell & Samuel S. Kim. 1993c. "Whither China's Quest for National Identity". In Dittmer & Kim 1993a (ed.): 237–290.
- Fanren8.com. (No year). "Ming Xuande zhang, Huangdi shilu juan zhi sanshiba" 明宣宗章皇帝实录卷之三十八. *Daizhige cang shu*, no date. <http://wenxian.fanren8.com/06/03/48/40.htm>, 19 December 2012.
- Ford, Christopher A. 2014. "Confucian Rationalizations for One-Party Dictatorship". Remarks on 9 May, 2014 at a conference on "Rethinking the Chinese World Order; Historical Perspectives on the Rise of China" at the University of Denver. Published by *New Paradigms Forum*, 15 May 2014. <http://www.newparadigmsforum.com/NPFtestsite/?p=1835>, 20 May 2014.
- Global Times. 2014a. "Cultural reflection can improve modern governance: Xi". *Global Times*. 13 October, 2014. <http://www.globaltimes.cn/content/886002.shtml>, 16 October 2014.
- Global Times. 2014b. "China must chart own course to rule of law". *Global Times*. 21 October, 2014. <http://www.globaltimes.cn/content/887350.shtml>, 21 October 2014.

- Global Times. 2014c. “Rule of man’ tradition changed by new law blueprint”. *Global Times*. 30 October, 2014. <http://www.globaltimes.cn/content/889069.shtml>, 19 November, 2014.
- Godehardt, Nadine. 2016. *No End of History? A Chinese Alternative Concept of International Order?* SWP Research Paper, RP 2, January 2016. Berlin: Stiftung Wissenschaft und Politik.
- Gov.cn. 2011. “China’s Peaceful Development”. Website of the State Council of the People’s Republic of China *English.gov.cn*, 6 September 2011. http://english.gov.cn/official/2011-09/06/content_1941354.htm, 21 November 2011.
- Guoji Ruxue Lianhehui 国际儒学联合会 (ed.). 2015. *Ruxue: Shijie heping yu fazhan. Jinian Kongzi danchen 2565 zhounian guoji xueshu yantaohui lunwenji* 儒学：世界和平与发展—纪念孔子诞辰2565周年国际学术研讨会论文集. Vol. 2. Beijing: Jiuzhou Chubanshe.
- Guowuyuan Xinwen Bangongshi 国务院新闻办公室 (ed.). 2014. *Jiedu Zhongguo Waijiao Xin Lilun* 解读中国外交新理念. Beijing: Wuzhou Chuanbo Chubanshe.
- Hermann, Charles F. & Charles W. Kegley, Jr. & James N. Rosenau (ed.). 1989. *New Directions in the Study of Foreign Policy*. London: Unwin Hyman.
- Holsti, Kalevi. 1970. “National role conceptions in the study of foreign policy”. *International Studies Quarterly*, Vol. 14: 233–309.
- Horesh, Niv & Emilian Kavalski (ed.). 2014. *Asian Thought on China’s Changing International Relations*. Basingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan. DOI: 10.1057/9781137299338, 2 May 2016.
- Hu Jintao 2007. Hu Jintao’s report delivered at the 17th National Congress of the Communist Party of China on 15 October, 2007. *News.xinhuanet.com*, 24 October 2007. http://news.xinhuanet.com/english/2007-10/24/content_6938749_6.htm, 26 November 2012.
- Husa, Jaakko. 2015. *A New Introduction to Comparative Law*. Portland: Hart Publishing.
- Jiang Guanghui 姜广辉. 2007. “Guodian Chu-jian yu zaoqi Ruxue” 郭店楚简与早期儒学. *Lunwen Tianxia*, 25 November 2007. <http://www.lunwentianxia.com/products.free.3455418.1/>, 18 November 2009.
- Jiang Ming’an 姜明安 (ed.). 2015. *Fazhi guojia* 法治国家. Beijing: Social Sciences Academic Press.
- Jiang Zemin. 2002. Jiang Zemin’s report delivered at the 16th Party Congress National Congress of the Communist Party of China on 8 November, 2002. *China.org.cn*, 17 November 2002. <http://www.china.org.cn/english/features/49007.htm>, 9 December 2015.
- Johnson, Chalmers & E. B. Keehn. 1994. “A Disaster in the Making: Rational Choice and Asian Studies”. *The National Interest*, 36 (summer 1994): 14–22.
- Johnston, Alistair Iain. 1998. *Cultural Realism – Strategic Culture and Grand Strategy in Chinese History*. Princeton: Princeton University Press.
- Kallio, Jyrki. 2014 (transl. & ed.). *Mestari Kongin keskustelut. Kungfutselaisuuden ydinolemus*. Helsinki: Gaudeamus.
- Kallio, Jyrki. 2016a. *China’s new foreign politics: Xi Jinping’s universal rule by virtue?* FIIA Briefing Paper 189, January 2016. The Finnish Institute of International Affairs. http://www.fiaa.fi/en/publication/556/china_s_new_foreign_politics/, 14 January 2016.
- Kallio, Jyrki. 2016b. Towards Confucian communalism: a match made in heaven? *International Communication of Chinese Culture*, Vol. 3, Issue 6: 1–16. DOI: 10.1007/s40636-016-0057-y, 13 August 2016.
- Kim, Samuel S. 1998a (ed.). *China and the World—Chinese Foreign Policy Faces the New Millennium*. Boulder: Westview Press.
- Kim, Samuel S. 1998b. “Chinese Foreign Policy in Theory and Practice”. In Kim 1998a (ed.): 3–33.
- King, Gary, Robert O. Keohane & Sidney Verba. 1994. *Designing Social Inquiry: Scientific Inference in Qualitative Research*. Princeton: Princeton University Press
- Legge, James. 1972. *The Chinese Classics with a translation, critical and exegetical notes, prolegomena, and copious indexes. Volume I. Confucian Analects, The Great Learning, and the Doctrine of the Mean. Second Edition, Revised*. Taipei: Wen Shi Zhe Chubanshe.

- Li Buyun 李步云. 2015. "Shixing yi fa zhi guo, jianshe shehui zhuyi fazhi guojia" 实行依法治国, 建设社会主义法治国家. In Jiang 2015: 3–27.
- Li Cunshan 李存山. 2012. "Zhong-shu zhi Dao yu Zhongguo jin-xiandai de duiwai guanxi" 忠恕之道与中国近现代的对外关系. *Zhongguo Shehui Kexueyuan Yanjiushengyuan Xuebao*. September, 2012, Vol. 5 Issue 191: 11–18.
- Li Zehou 李泽厚. 1994. "Zai tan 'shiyong lixing'" 再谈 "实用理性". In *Yuan Dao*, vol. 1, 152–158.
- Li Zehou 李泽厚. 2008. *Xinban Zhongguo gudai sixiangshi lun* 新版中国古代思想史论. Tianjin: Tianjin Shehui Kexueyuan Chubanshe.
- Liu Mingfu 刘明福. 2009. *Zhongguo Meng: Zhongguo de mubiao, daolu ji zixinli (Xiudingban)* 中国梦—中国的目标、道路及自信力 (修订版). Beijing: Zhongguo Youyi Chubans Gongsi.
- Liu Xiaoying 刘晓英. 2012. "Shiyong lixing: Yingxiang Zhongguo jueqi de neizai wenhua yinsu" 实用理性: 影响中国崛起的内在文化因素. *Guoji Guanxi Xueyuan Xuebao* (Beijing), 3/2012: 108–115.
- Lodén, Torbjörn. 2006. *Rediscovering Confucianism. A Major Philosophy of Life in East Asia*. Folkestone, Kent: Global Oriental.
- Luo Guojie 罗国杰. 1999. "Zhongguo gudai Rujia sixiang yu zhengzhi tongzhi" 中国古代儒家思想与政治统治. In Zhang 1999 (ed.): 404–444.
- Makeham, John. 2008. *Lost Soul. "Confucianism" in contemporary Chinese academic discourse*. Harvard-Yenching Institute Monographs 64. Harvard University Asia Center. Cambridge, Ma: Harvard University Press.
- Makeham, John. 2011. "The revival of Guoxue, Historical Antecedents and Contemporary Aspirations". *China Perspectives*, No. 2011/1: 14–21.
- Mao Zedong. 1998a. *On Diplomacy*. Beijing: Foreign Languages Press.
- Mao Zedong. 1998b. "The Five Principles of Peaceful Coexistence are a long-term policy." In Mao 1998a: 136–150.
- Motoh, Helene. 2015. "Peace as Evenness? Reflections on the Peaceful Development Doctrine and Their Classical References". In Rošker & Visočnik (ed.) 2015: 99–112.
- Peng Yongjie 彭永捷. 2013. "Wangdao zhengzhi yu Tianxia zhuyi" 王道政治与天下主义. *Xiandai Zhhexue*, Vol. 127 No. 2, March 2013: 90–102.
- People.com.cn. 2012. "Xi Jinping: Cheng qian qi hou, jiwang-kailai, jixu chaozhe Zhonghua minzu weida fuxing mubiao fenyong qianjin" 习近平: 承前启后 继往开来 继续朝着中华民族伟大复兴目标奋勇前进. *Renminwang*, 29 November, 2012. <http://politics.people.com.cn/n/2012/1129/c1024-19744072.html>, 29 November 2012.
- Pye, Lucian. 1992. *Spirit of Chinese Politics, New Edition*. Cambridge, Ma: Harvard University Press.
- Qian Qichen 钱其琛. 2001. "Zaori wancheng zuguo tongyi daye, shixian Zhonghua minzu weida fuxing" 早日完成祖国统一大业 实现中华民族伟大复兴. *Taiwan Affairs Office of the State Council PRC website*, 22 January 2001. http://www.gwytb.gov.cn/zt/jiang/201101/t20110105_1676862.htm, 16 September 2016.
- Qin, Yaqing. 2016. "A Relational Theory of World Politics". *International Studies Review*, Vol. 18, Issue 1, March 2016: 33–47. DOI: 10.1093/isr/viv031, 27 September 2016.
- QStheory.cn. 2014. "Yi fa zhi guo yu jianchi renmin minzhu zhuanzheng" 依法治国与坚持人民民主专政. *QStheory.cn*, 1 October, 2014. http://www.qstheory.cn/dukan/hqwg/2014-10/11/c_1112780248.htm, 19 November 2014.
- Raphals, Lisa. 1992. *Knowing Words, Wisdom and Cunning in the Classical Traditions of China and Greece*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press.
- Riesmann, Catherine Kohler. 2008. *Narrative Methods for the Human Sciences*. Thousand Oaks, Ca: Sage Publications.
- Rosenau, James N. 1989. "Toward Single-Country Theories of Foreign Policy: The Case of the USSR". In Hermann, Kegley & Rosenau (ed.) 1989: 53–76.

- Rošker, Jana S. & Nataša Visočnik (ed.). 2015. *Contemporary East Asia and the Confucian Revival*. Newcastle upon Tyne: Cambridge Scholars Publishing.
- Ruskola, Teemu. 2012. "Legal Orientalism". *Michigan Law Review*, Vol. 101, No. 1 (Oct., 2012): 179–234.
- Schoenhals, Michael. 1992. *Doing Things with Words in Chinese Politics. Five Studies*. Berkeley: Institute of East Asian Studies, University of California.
- Sturgeon, Donald (ed.). 2011. *Chinese Text Project*. <http://ctext.org>.
- Sun, Anna. 2013. *Confucianism as a World Religion, Contested Histories and Contemporary Realities*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
- Tang Zhouyan 唐洲雁 & Han Bing 韩冰. 2014. "Zhaochao zhaoban taguo zhengzhi zhidu xing-butong – Xuexi Xi Jinping tongzhi zai qingzhu Quanguo Renmin Daibiao Dahui chengli 60 zhounian dahui shang de jianghua" 照抄照搬他国政治制度行不通—学习习近平总书记在庆祝全国人民代表大会成立60周年大会上的讲话. *Renminwang*, 23 September, 2014. <http://opinion.people.com.cn/n/2014/0923/c1003-25712130.html>, 16 October 2014.
- Roselle, Laura, Alister Miskimmon & Ben O'Loughlin. 2014. "Strategic narrative: A new means to understand soft power." *Media, War & Conflict*, 2014, Vol. 7 (1): 70–84. DOI: 10.1177/1750635213516696, 13 September 2016.
- UNSC. 2004. "The rule of law and transitional justice in conflict and post-conflict societies. Report of the Secretary-General. S/2004/616." United Nations Security Council. *UN.org*, 23 Aug. 2004. http://www.un.org/en/ga/search/view_doc.asp?symbol=S/2004/616, 10 March 2016.
- Wang, Yi 王毅. 2014. "Jianchi zhengque yi-liguan, jiji fahui fuzeren daguo zuoyong" 坚持正确义利观, 积极发挥负责任大国作用. In Guowuyuan Xinwen Bangongshi 国务院新闻办公室 (ed.) 2014: 27–33.
- Weber, Ralph. 2013. "The Politics of 'Confucian Political Philosophy'". *Warp, Weft, and Way*, 25 January, 2013. <http://warpweftandway.com/weber-the-politics-of-confucian-political-philosophy/>, 2 May 2016.
- Weber, Ralph. 2014. "On Wang Hui's Contribution to an 'Asian School of Chinese International Studies'". In Horesh & Kavalski (ed.) 2014: 76–94.
- Weber, Ralph. 2015. "In Search of Numbers and Substance: On a Current Confucian Revival in the PRC". In Rošker & Visočnik (ed.) 2015: 171–190.
- Woodrow Wilson Center, 2006. *A National Strategic Narrative*. Woodrow Wilson International Center for Scholars. http://www.scifun.org/readings/A_National_Strategic_Narrative.pdf, 9 December 2015.
- Xi Jinping. 2014. *The Governance of China*. Beijing: Foreign Languages Press.
- Xiao Qunzhong 肖群忠. 2015. "Ren yi xin he minben Datong — Zhonghua hexin jiazhi 'xin liu de' lun" 仁义信和民本大同—中华核心价值“新六德”论. In Guoji Ruxue Lianhehui (ed.) 2015: 357–365.
- Xinhuanet. 2013. "Xi Jinping: China to further friendly relations with neighboring countries". *English.news.cn*, 26 October, 2013. http://news.xinhuanet.com/english/china/2013-10/26/c_125601680.htm, 9 December 2016.
- Xinhuanet. 2014. "Xi stresses core socialist values". *English.news.cn*, 25 February 2014. http://news.xinhuanet.com/english/china/2014-02/25/c_126190257.htm, 27 May 2015.
- Xinhuanet 新华网. 2010. "Shouquan fabu: Zhong-Gong Zhongyang guanyu zhiding guomin jingji he shehui fazhan dishi'er ge wu nian guihua de jianyi" 授权发布: 中共中央关于制定国民经济和社会发展第十二个五年规划的建议. *Xinhuanet*, 27 Oct 2010. http://news.xinhuanet.com/politics/2010-10/27/c_12708501.htm, 29 October 2010.
- Xinhuanet 新华网. 2014. "Shouquan fabu: Zhongguo Gongchandang dishibajie Zhongyang Weiyuanhui disici quanti huiyi gongbao" 授权发布: 中国共产党第十八届中央委员会第四次全体会议公报. *Xinhuanet*, 23 October, 2014. http://news.xinhuanet.com/politics/2014-10/23/c_1112953884.htm, 24 October 2014.

- Xiong Jian 熊建. 2016. "Jiang hao Zhongguo gushi, geng hao goutong shijie" 讲好中国故事, 更好沟通世界. *Renmin Ribao* (haiwaiban), 20 February, 2016: 1.
- Xu Jin & Du Zhenyuan. 2015. "The Dominant Thinking Sets in Chinese Foreign Policy Research: A Criticism". *The Chinese Journal of International Politics*, (Autumn 2015) 8 (3): 251–279. DOI: 10.1093/cjip/pov002, 23 September 2015.
- Yan Xuetong. 2006. "The Rise of China and its Power Status". *The Chinese Journal of International Politics*, No. 1, 2006: 5–33.
- Yan Xuetong. 2011. *Ancient Chinese Thought, Modern Chinese Power*. Edited by Daniel A. Bell and Sun Zhe. Translated by Edmund Ryden. Princeton: Princeton University Press.
- Yang Kai 杨凯. 2016. "Zhongguo jueqi wei shijie dailai zhengnengliang" 中国崛起为世界带来正能量. *Renmin Ribao* (haiwaiban), 19 Feb. 2016: 1.
- Ye Xiaonan 叶晓楠. 2016. "Chuancheng minzu jingshen, ningju Zhongguo liliang" 传承民族精神凝聚中国力量. *Renmin Ribao* (haiwaiban), 27 February 2016: 1.
- Ye Zicheng 叶自成. 2013. "Huaxia zhuyi: Zhongguo de bentu renwen jingshen" 华夏主义: 中国的本土人文精神. *Xueshu Qianyan*. 2013.02: 64–83.
- Ye Zicheng 叶自成. 2014. "Chuantong wenhua jinghua yu Xi Jinping zhiguo linian" 传统文化精华与习近平治国理念. *Renmin Luntan*, 7 February 2014. <http://theory.people.com.cn/n/2014/0207/c112851-24291830.html>, 9 December 2014.
- Yuan Dao editorial board 原道编辑委员会. 1994. *Yuan Dao* 原道, vol. 1. Beijing: Zhongguo Shehui Kexueyuan Chubanshe.
- Zhang Kemin 张克敏 (ed.). 1999. *Zhong-wai lishi wenti ba ren tan* 中外历史问题八人谈. Beijing: Zhong-Gong Zhongyang Dangxiao Chubanshe.
- Zhao Tingyang 赵汀阳. 2005. "Wei shenme tichu 'Tianxia tixi' lilun" 为什么提出“天下体系”理论. *Zhong Ping* web-edition, Vol. 62, 2005, reprinted at ChinaReview.com 5 August 2005. <http://www.china-review.com/gao.asp?id=16575>, 13 March 2012.

Original publications

Tradition in Chinese politics

*The Party-state's reinvention of the past and
the critical response from public intellectuals*

Jyrki Kallio



ULKOPOLIITTINEN INSTITUUTTI
UTRIKESPOLITISKA INSTITUTET
THE FINNISH INSTITUTE OF INTERNATIONAL AFFAIRS

Introduction

China's rise to become a true superpower is overshadowed by tough internal challenges. Although the economy is growing at a record pace and the living standards of the population as a whole are rising, the adverse effects of the rapid growth, such as inequality, unemployment, working conditions and environmental degradation, have given rise to an alarming amount of unrest around the country.¹ Furthermore, the recent financial crisis has been a reminder of the uncertainties that beset the economy. Some new crisis, especially one related to food, water or energy, might severely affect the wellbeing of the population. With the country's stability at stake, the Communist Party has to anchor its right to rule to something more permanent than economic growth and to strengthen its position as the moral and spiritual leader of the nation. However, the Party leaders are certainly aware that in the light of today's realities, communism has long since dried up as the fountainhead of moral and spiritual inspiration. Instead, the Party seems to be tapping into history and tradition to revamp the basis for its leadership.

This study discusses the ways in which history and tradition are currently being used to legitimize the Party-state in China. Historical precedence and traditional conventions have always been politicized and have always held a key position in defining the basis of the ruler's power in China. This situation prevails today. China as we understand it today—a unified state with an area equal to Europe and inhabited by the Chinese—is no more ancient than the European nation states. Nation-building is still an ongoing process in China. To steer the process in the right direction, history is interpreted and even reinvented in such a way that makes the current realities—the established scope of the territory of the People's Republic of China and the official one-ness of the multi-ethnic Chinese nation—seem like the natural continuation of a 5,000-year-long history.

Furthermore, the Communist Party is in dire need of some ideological backing for its capitalist policies, which have resulted not only in great growth but also in a widening gap between rich and poor. The Party's ideology has already long been called

¹ See e.g. "Making sense of 'mass incidents'" by Wang Weilan, *Global Times*, 30 May 2009, at <http://special.globaltimes.cn/2009-05/433271.html>. Accessed 19 Aug 2010.

“socialism with Chinese characteristics”. With socialism rusting away, the Chinese characteristics become even more central. The Party is looking for something to patch up and support its failing ideology, and has apparently turned to traditional, Chinese schools of thought as a source of suitable national essence. In the slogans of the future we will see much less socialism and many more Chinese characteristics. The Communist Party has begun propagating such values as harmony, communality, filiality, loyalty, unity and stability, which can be deduced from the traditional schools of thought. In particular, ‘harmony’, a term which is related to Confucianism, has gained a central position in today’s political mantra. In effect, the Party seems to be moving towards “Chinese tradition with socialist characteristics”.

In China today there is vigorous, widespread public debate about the bigger questions that the Communist Party’s quest for tradition raises: What is tradition? What is Chinese? What is China? Who are the Chinese? The questions are difficult ones, because once history is made into a political tool, its interpretations tend to lose all connection to historical facts. For instance, when the Party defines the scope of China’s territorial unity as “all of China”, they are projecting an ancient ideal into the modern era in a most ahistorical manner. Conversely, there are ethnic-nationalist extremists who declare that many of the ethnic groups living in China are not Chinese at all. Different actors, including many who may be labelled ‘public intellectuals’, as well as ordinary netizens,² both those affiliated with the Party-state and those outside the establishment, take part in the debate, which is ongoing in various books and articles, and on websites. The debate is strikingly open, but not surprisingly so. The issues often revolve around historiography, philosophy or even

² Richard A. Posner defines a public intellectual as “someone who uses general ideas drawn from history, philosophy, political science, economics, law, literature, ideas that are part of the cultural intellectual tradition of the world, to address contemporary events, usually of a political or ideological flavor, and does so in the popular media, whether in the form of Op Ed pieces, television appearances, signing full-page advertisements, or writing magazine articles or books addressed to a general audience” (<http://www.carnegiecouncil.org/resources/transcripts/130.html>, accessed 29 Oct 2010).

linguistics, which reduces the danger of attracting the attention of censorship officials.³

This study introduces and analyses the debate related to the content and interpretation of history, and provides the historical and philosophical basis necessary for understanding the phenomena related to defining the essence of Chinese tradition. Furthermore, it highlights the challenges of opening a discussion on tradition, which may turn out to be the proverbial Pandora's box—or to paraphrase a saying about fire, a good servant but a bad master. The Party-state will want to ensure that the discussion goes in the right direction, but it will not be easy in the increasingly plural society in China today. This study is primarily based on Chinese-language sources (books, articles and internet posts) originating from the People's Republic of China.

The outcome of the debate will be of no minor significance for the future of Chinese society, how tradition will be defined, and the kind of new ideological structure that is likely to emerge as a result. It will even have consequences for China's foreign policy. Domestic and foreign politics are strongly interrelated in every country, and China is no exception, not least because many difficult issues related to China's external image are considered internal (especially Taiwan and the border regions of Tibet and Xinjiang). Besides, China's foreign policy has never been devoid of ideology.⁴

The analysis in this study is, of necessity, focused on two subjects: Confucianism and unity. When defining tradition in China, it is impossible to overlook the importance of Confucianism, which holds a central position among the traditional schools of thought in China. Unity, in turn, has always been the main dogma in Chinese political philosophy. In the debate on history, the concept of unity and its different aspects are central.

Although Confucianism, which was the official ideology during the imperial era, has been condemned as feudal and reactionary by

³ This strategy of discussing issues with relevance to contemporary society is very traditional in China (as well as elsewhere in the world). My Licentiate Thesis introduces one example of using a compilation of classical literature to criticize the establishment during the early Qing dynasty (see Kallio 2009).

⁴ "The evidence ... suggests that China's realpolitik behavior is ideationally rooted." (Johnston 1996, 221.)

both the nationalist revolutionaries in the early 20th century and the communists alike, it undeniably retains a pivotal position in Chinese thought. The Party-state's chosen ambassador of harmony both within and without China is Confucius. Today, not only is lip service paid to Confucian values, but Confucianism as a school of thought is still alive, especially in the form of so-called New Confucianism. Therefore, in order to draw the battle lines over the real or desirable character of Chinese tradition, it is necessary to pay attention to the ongoing debate concerning the true essence of Confucianism.

Confucius is well-known to all and sufficiently vague in his teachings for his message to be interpreted at will. During the imperial era, he was made something of a saint king. For the revolutionaries in the early 20th century, he was the embodiment of everything backward. During the Chinese Cultural Revolution in the 1960s and 70s, he became the scapegoat in the political campaigns targeting 'revisionism'. Those who explain the rise of the 'Asian Tigers' through cultural values like to say that Confucianism is about valuing education, selflessness and the common good. The Party-line 'Socialist Confucian' scholars today explain that Confucius taught stability, unity and harmony. In contrast, some contemporary New Confucians equate Confucianism with liberalism and democracy.

Although the contradictory interpretations of Confucianism pose a challenge to the Communist Party, Professor Li Xiangping (李向平) and Doctoral Candidate Shi Dajian (石大建) from Shanghai University argue that the Confucian revival movement and the efforts of the Party-state to strengthen its legitimacy are actually mutually beneficial processes. The rising interest in Confucian values has been manifested in the preservation of Confucian cultural relics and the promotion of academic research on Confucianism. These manifestations have, in turn, allocated and mobilized resources upon which Confucianism as a social movement has been building itself, Li and Shi maintain.⁵

Li and Shi sketch a circular process whereby the allocation of "Confucian resources", amplified by a spiritual crisis and the economic downturn, has given rise to the Confucian revival movement. The movement provides legitimization for national and local authorities, while the authorities, in turn, mobilize resources

⁵ Li & Shi 2009, 79.

which enhance the revitalization of Confucianism. Thus the circle is closed. Li and Shi argue that Confucian values and customs, such as the ideal of the oneness of family and state, are so deeply embedded in Chinese culture that they serve the legitimization of the public authorities particularly well.⁶

Unity is today presented as the dominant historical trend. Traditionally, the importance of unity for the rulers' legitimacy derived from the belief, proven sound by actual and invented historical experiences alike, that unity equalled stability, and stability, in turn, meant peace and wellbeing. Were the state to become divided, it would mean war, suffering and chaos, and chaos was a sign as serious as natural calamities that Heaven had withdrawn its mandate from the ruler. An early developer of Confucianism, Mencius, proclaimed that the emperor had to be benevolent towards the population lest he lose the Mandate of Heaven and the people may exercise their right to overthrow him.

In imperial China, unity was the external manifestation of the Heavenly Mandate, the divine blessing of the emperors' power. The belief in Heaven and its mandate dates back to the earliest times of Chinese civilization.⁷ Unity was an ideology in itself, known as the Grand Unity. After the ideal had become a reality with the first unification of China and the birth of the first empire in 221 BCE, unity retained its position as the creed of imperial China. It stood for unity of not only the concrete realm, the unity of the state, but also the spiritual realm, the unity of ideology. The Emperor was, after all, the Son of Heaven, an earthly ruler as well as a spiritual leader.

⁶ Ibid., 80.

⁷ The divinity of Heaven was central to the belief-system of the *Huaxia* tribes whose state, Zhou, gained hegemony over the other states in ca. 1045 BCE. It is debatable whether the cult of Heaven of the Zhou should be classified as a religion or a political philosophy (Pines 2002, 58). The unity under the Zhou was based on pledges of allegiance of the other principalities and fiefs to the Zhou king. This system became wholly nominal in 771 BCE and broke down entirely in 476 BCE. The ensuing period of internal warfare lasted until 221 BCE when China was unified into one empire by the king of Qin state, known thereafter as the First Emperor, *Shi Huangdi*. Confucius, who lived around the turn of the 6th and 5th centuries BCE, perceived the Zhou as a lost golden age. By then, Heaven had "transformed from a purposeful deity ... into impersonal law" which, nevertheless, remained "an ultimate source of political and social order" (ibid., 62).

Tellingly, the Chinese word for ‘legitimacy’ (*zhengtong*, 正统) also stands for ‘orthodoxy’. From the early imperial era, Confucianism was harnessed as the embodiment of ideological unity.

In pre-imperial China, the most valuable regalia included a set of nine three-legged bronze vessels called *ding* (鼎). It was said that as long as the Mandate of Heaven was strong, the *ding* were heavy and their ownership could not be transferred to another ruler.⁸ Just as a *ding* has three legs, the legitimacy of the Communist Party of China today rests upon three pillars. All three are aspects of the Grand Unity, and none of the three is rock-solid.⁹



Figure 1. A bronze *ding* (鼎) from the late Shang dynasty

Source: Mountain/Wikimedia Commons

⁸ One related story, recorded in *Zuo zhuan* and dated at 606 BCE, is translated into Finnish in Kallio 2005, 66–68. The nine *ding* were the property of the ruling clan of the Zhou state and were stolen by the Qin army in the middle of the 3rd century BCE.

⁹ Referring to the late 1980s and the international collapse of communism, Wang Zheng (2008, 788) claims: “China’s Communist rulers feared that, in the minds of ordinary Chinese citizens, they had already lost the ‘mandate of heaven’ to rule.”

First is territorial integrity: China is one and there is only one China. The Communist Party was celebrated for its ability to unify the country and stabilize the economy after having won the civil war on the mainland. This put an end to a century-long era of chaos. However, the border regions of Tibet and Xinjiang continue to give cause for concern in regard to stability. Worse still, the main population, the Han Chinese, is also starting to question the preferability of a multi-ethnic state. The inability to put a final end to the civil war and make Taiwan an integral part of the People's Republic of China is a thorn in the Party's side. If China were to break up, or if Taiwan were to become an independent country totally separate from China, it would signal inexcusable weakness on the part of the communist regime.

Second is economic growth, which is both a result of and a prerequisite for stability. Having learned from the problems created by an overzealous planned economy, the strategy followed by the Chinese government since the late 1970s is to give free rein to capitalism and allow a part of the population to acquire wealth first. The rationale is that the spillover from the economic development will eventually reach the poorest regions and segments of the population as well. If the growth stagnates, however, the economic discrepancies will remain wide and have the potential to create major unrest. Li Xiangping and Shi Dajian argue that the legitimacy of the Chinese government has relied mainly on economic growth since the beginning of the reform era, but that is no longer the case.¹⁰

Third is a unifying ideology. It used to be communism, but in the wake of the chosen development strategy, precious little remains, except for one-party rule. The Communist Party has become the most sought-after network for Chinese entrepreneurs instead of the vanguard of revolution. At the same time, the people seem to have lost faith in communism, and China is therefore commonly perceived to be suffering from a spiritual and ideological vacuum. People are seeking to fill this vacuum by turning towards (quasi-) religious sects and cults, including the infamous Falungong, and other belief systems and ideologies. In a similar situation, many rulers across history have resorted to bolstering nationalism as the unifying idea, and contemporary China is no exception. Nationalism provides no final answer, however. Particularly in a multi-ethnic country such

¹⁰ Li & Shi 2009, 79.

as China, nationalism can germinate dangerous side-effects, like ethnic chauvinism. Furthermore, strong anti-foreign tendencies among the population would harm China's reputation as an attractive investment destination.

Even the Communist Party media has called on the leadership to “re-instill a sense of moral values in society”.¹¹ In order to do so, the Party is today resorting to neither communism nor nationalism. Instead, it relies upon history and tradition. Not wishing to identify any one school of thought with the true tradition, the Party-state is promoting ‘Traditional Learning’ (or ‘National Learning’) as the eternal and indigenous soul of China's culture. As the concept is based on culture and philosophy, it is nationalistically-flavoured and thus has the appeal of nationalism but not the risks—or so the Party would appear to hope.

This study is divided into three chapters. Chapter I shows how the Party-state has reinvented history, particularly in relation to the dogma of unity, for nation-building purposes. Chapter II focuses on the attempts to reinvent tradition by the Party-state and how selected elements of tradition have consequently been turned into Traditional Learning. Chapter III takes a closer look at Confucianism and how it has been reinterpreted and even reinvented by different actors.

Chapter I summarizes the discussion related to the interpretation of China's history regarding ethnic relations and territory. It demonstrates the hollowness of the Communist Party's apparent belief that ‘whoever controls history, controls China’, by showing the real fragility of the officially-endorsed myth of China's territorial unity.

Chapter II shows how Traditional Learning fits in with the government-endorsed drive for harmony and patriotism. It also discusses the problematic nature of Confucianism in relation to Traditional Learning and Chinese communism, and illustrates how Confucianism is deeply intertwined with both.

Chapter III analyzes the historical roots of contemporary Confucianism in China and provides an introduction to the ongoing debate on the character of Confucianism. It highlights the difficulties in constructing such interpretations of Confucianism or Traditional Learning which cannot be contested. It demonstrates how different

¹¹ “Worshipping money, China won't gain trust”, *Global Times*, 26 February 2010, at <http://opinion.globaltimes.cn/editorial/2010-02/508158.html>. Accessed 26 Feb 2010.

actors are able to find justification for widely differing views even when they are supposedly based on the very same ‘roots’.

Finally, the Conclusions return to the question of the relevance of tradition, and Confucianism in particular, to Chinese society today. They touch upon the compatibility of Confucianism with modernization, the relation between Confucianism and the dogma of unity, and the question of the religious nature of Confucianism. The last point is related to the desire by certain dissident Confucians to turn Confucianism into a ‘state religion’ of China on the one hand, and the possibility that Traditional Learning with Confucian values at its core may become the new ‘national doctrine’ of the Communist Party on the other. Curiously enough, there is no difference between ‘national religion’ and ‘national doctrine’ in the Chinese language.

I believe that the proponents of a state religion are unlikely to succeed, but that it is at least a theoretical possibility that Traditional Learning may replace communism one day. If this proves to be the case, the phenomenon this study examines may be what, from a politological point of view, may be seen as the birth of a new political religion in China. Whether that would make the Party’s *ding* heavy enough to remain in situ, or on the contrary, force the Party to renounce its position, is a question for the futurologists. This paper will start by peering into the past.

Chapter I

Historical myths behind Chinese nationalism

Introduction to Chapter I

This chapter illustrates how the Party-state has reinvented history for its own nation-building purposes. It also discusses the politicization of history by other actors. The focus is on the dogma of unity—also grandly called the Grand Unity (*Da yitong*, 大一统)—which stipulates that wellbeing and prosperity can only exist in a unified China. Unity refers both to the concrete and the abstract: unity of the territory, unity of the nation, and unity of the ideology. One could say that the dogma of unity is an ideology in itself as it is the single most important prerequisite for the rulers' legitimacy in Chinese political tradition.

Historically, the ruling dynasty was to be considered legitimate only if it was able to rule the whole of China. Chairman Mao was strongly influenced by this traditional view, and the legitimacy of the Communist Party has always relied on its ability to safeguard peace and prosperity through the maintenance of unity. Moreover, the idea that periods of unity have been more customary than periods of division in China has become the prevailing view even among Western scholars.

A concrete example of the linkage between unity and legitimacy is the Taiwan issue. Viewing unity as the basis for legitimacy is the main reason why the Taiwan issue is so politically sensitive. As long as Taiwan is not an integral part of China, the Communist Party may be seen as having failed to rule the whole of China, and the legitimacy of such a ruler is incomplete.

The centrality of the discourse of unity is interrelated with the orthodox historiography in the People's Republic of China. The periods of division are shown as divisions *within* China, not *of* China. Similarly, the various 'minority' tribes that used to inhabit the bordering areas of imperial China are presented as primordial

members of the Chinese nation. In this way, the government aims to promote belief in one Chinese nation and, subsequently, patriotism.

In this chapter, I also introduce some of the few Chinese thinkers who call into question the conventional historical ‘truths’. They call for a more nuanced view of Chinese history, such as differentiating between ‘China Proper’ (the Chinese heartland) and ‘greater China’ (the territory within the borders of the People’s Republic), as well as between the ‘Chinese’ (the Han and their ancestors) and the ‘non-Chinese’ (the non-Han peoples) in history. Hence it becomes evident that the claims by the Chinese government that its border areas have always been parts of China are ahistorical, and that China was a unified, ‘Chinese-ruled’ state for much less time than people usually assume.

Officially, China is a multi-ethnic nation, consisting of the dominant Han nationality and fifty-five minority nationalities. The events in the troubled border areas of Tibet and Xinjiang indicate that the Chinese nation is not as harmonious as the central government would like it to be. The attempts to emphasize national unity are also backfiring among the dominant Han Chinese population, whose patriotism is turning into ethnic nationalism. Many young Han Chinese see themselves as the standard-bearers of Chinese civilization, based on the cultural achievements conceived by their ancestry, which has always been the dominant population of the Chinese heartland. Han nationalism has become an issue which the central government has to address, in addition to the ethnic insurgencies in the minority areas.

In order to understand the depth of Han nationalism, it is necessary to acknowledge that the discourse on race is a permanent undercurrent in China. Many Han nationalists are no longer content with an identity as just one of the ethnic groups, but perceive themselves rather as representatives of a superior race. Therefore, racism plays a role in the conflicts between the nationalities. The reason why Han nationalists call into question the legitimacy of the non-Han ruling houses, such as the Qing dynasty of the Manchu, is their foreignness.

To negate the ‘Chineseness’ of the Manchu dynasty is to call into question the multi-ethnic character of today’s China. To deem the Manchu rule illegitimate is to undermine the claim of the People’s Republic to Tibet and Xinjiang. To realize that the unity of ‘greater

China' is a relatively new and short-term phenomenon is to query the territorial integrity of the People's Republic. To conclude that even the unity of 'China Proper' is just a by-plot in Chinese history is to shake the very foundations of the legitimacy of the Communist Party.

Several critical Chinese thinkers caution against the use of excessive practices to gain and maintain unity and centralized rule. Some note that a pluralist, liberalistic tradition of unity is not foreign to China but can be found in classical Confucianism. Some even state that commerce and science have flourished in China especially during periods of disunity, and speculate whether unity may actually be detrimental to pluralism, and thus to progress.

It is possible, and even necessary, for the Chinese to learn a lesson from history that is different from what is taught in Chinese schools. As Wang Zheng from Seton Hall University has written:

Much of the recent discussion regarding China revolves around the government's national strategy for "peaceful rise". However, what China should modernize in this process is not only its financial system and highway network, but also its historical education and propaganda apparatus. Many say China can rise peacefully only after it has changed from a Communist dictatorship to a multiparty democracy. However, without liberation from the compelling complex of historical myth and trauma, even a multiparty democracy could lead China toward a dangerous development. A nationalist leader could easily use history and memory issues as tools of mobilization China's genuine democratization may only start with the disclosure of historical truths.¹²

The Chinese creed

Today, China's history is taught in Chinese schools and presented in Chinese museums in a way which emphasizes unity as an underlying common thread. The dogma of unity is the result of a long historical process. Even before the beginning of the imperial era (221 BCE–1911), it became necessary to establish criteria which could be used to justify a ruler's right to the throne.

¹² Wang Zheng 2008, 804.

For the rulers of the many states before the first unification of China in 221 BCE, it was a matter of life and death to know who was the true inheritor of the Heavenly Mandate. “The true mandate, it was believed, would protect them like a spiritual barrier against their northern adversaries ...”¹³ For the historians, charged with the task of providing justification for the inheritance of the Heavenly Mandate, determining what constitutes legitimate succession was a formidable challenge.

For centuries, many (especially Confucian) scholars perceived the first unification by the kingdom of Qin, which subjugated the other contesting states under its rule, as an immoral victory.¹⁴ However, since the dynasty was short-lived and was soon followed by the Han dynasty (206 BCE–220), which placed Confucianism on a pedestal as the state ideology of sorts, the Qin conquest was accepted as a *fait accompli*.

What then became the predominant issue in the discussion among historians was the legitimate succession following the demise of the Han dynasty. This issue was debated throughout the entire imperial era. The Han empire had begun to disintegrate in the late second century. In 220 CE, Emperor Xian of Han abdicated in favour of Cao Pi, ruler of the Wei Kingdom. Liu Bei, a descendant of the imperial family and ruler of the Shu Kingdom, declared himself emperor in 221. The Wu Kingdom ruled yet another third of the former empire. The period of division lasted for three centuries until the Sui dynasty was able to reunify the empire in 589.

For historians, the hardest choice to make was between Cao Pi and Liu Bei. The most influential interpretation was made by Sima Guang (司马光, 1019–1086), who authored the massive dynastic history entitled *Zizhi tongjian*, “The Comprehensive Mirror to Aid in Government”, which has remained popular ever since. It was a favourite read of Chairman Mao.¹⁵ Sima Guang ruled that Cao Pi’s Wei had been the legitimate successor of Han. Sima Guang also “developed a theory in which the unity of the empire was seen as the prerequisite of the true mandate”.¹⁶

¹³ Beck 1986, 373.

¹⁴ See, for instance, “Guo Qin lun”, Part I, by Jia Yi (贾谊, 200–168 BCE) and “Liu guo lun” by Su Che (苏辙, 1039–1112), translated respectively in Kallio 2007, 27–32, and Kallio 2008, 121–124.

¹⁵ Salisbury 1992, 9.

¹⁶ Beck 1986, 374.

Sima Guang's contemporary Ouyang Xiu (欧阳修, 1007–1072) argued that all the three post-Han kingdoms were equally illegitimate and that the mandate was discontinued altogether in 220. The influential Neo-Confucian scholar Zhu Xi (朱熹, 1130–1200) opined that Liu Bei's Shu had been the legitimate successor.¹⁷ Opinions about the legitimate successors following the fall of all three kingdoms were equally varied.

During the late Ming dynasty (1368–1644), the legitimacy debate between Shu and Wei surfaced once more. In the 1520s the dynasty was shaken by what became known as the Great Rites Controversy. The power struggle between the Jiajing Emperor and the officialdom culminated in the question of the proper ritual treatment of the emperor's deceased parents; the issue was tricky because the Jiajing Emperor was not the son of the former emperor. The opponents of the emperor, who formed the majority among the officialdom, used precedence from the Wei Kingdom to bolster their arguments. The supporters of the emperor challenged the precedence because they claimed that the Wei Kingdom had not been legitimate. The Jiajing Emperor got his way in the end by severely punishing the two hundred officials who had opposed him.¹⁸

Sima Guang's legitimacy theory has influenced the established view even among modern Chinese and Western historians. "The idea that a unified China is in some way more normal than a divided China has taken firm root in Western sinology", writes B. J. Mansvelt Beck.¹⁹

The criterion which has been used in modern times to establish a dynasty's legitimacy is also the same as the one used by Sima Guang: whether the dynasty was able to rule 'the whole of China' or not.²⁰ Using this criterion has also made it possible to present the periods of rule by 'non-Chinese' conquerors, such as the Yuan of the Mongols (1271–1368) and the Qing of the Manchu (1644–1911), as legitimate

¹⁷ *Ibid.*, 374–375.

¹⁸ *Ibid.*, 375, fn. 145. Mote 2003, 663–666.

¹⁹ Beck 1986, 375.

²⁰ Beck 1986, 375–376.

‘Chinese’ dynasties.²¹ Nevertheless, the transitional periods have always been difficult. Anti-Mongol sentiments were strong during the early Yuan dynasty, as were anti-Manchu sentiments in early Qing, and again on the eve of the republican revolution.

When the Republic of China defined its borders at the beginning of the twentieth century, it was perhaps natural that it should take the borders under the preceding imperial dynasty, the Qing dynasty, as the basis. The leader of the nationalists during the civil war, Chiang Kai-shek, was very clear about the character of the areas around the Chinese heartland, ‘China Proper’: they were not parts of China as such but crucial buffer zones. He called Manchuria, Inner and Outer Mongolia, Xinjiang, Tibet, Taiwan and the Ryūkyū Islands “each a fortress essential for the nation’s defence and security”.²² The communists followed Chiang’s lead. China’s claim to the South China Sea is also based on similar thinking.²³

The legitimacy of the Communist Party derived from its ability to restore peace and unity after the period of chaos and warfare which had prevailed since 1850. Unity had to apply to all China, ‘China Proper’ as well as the surrounding buffer zones. Otherwise it would have been difficult to justify the claim to the ‘fortresses’ and to maintain harmony within the newly formed, multi-ethnic nation. This necessitated downplaying the fact that the Qing was the royal house of the Manchu, who had been designated the hated target of republican nationalism. Qing and, in its wake, all the other ‘non-Chinese’ dynasties, had to be presented as legitimate, albeit feudalistic and reactionary, predecessors of the communist regime.

²¹ In this paper, I use the term ‘Chinese’ (in single quotation marks) to refer to the dominant ethnic-cultural group populating ‘China Proper’, usually called *Huaxia* (华夏) when referring to the pre-imperial era and Han when referring to modern times. ‘China Proper’ refers to the fertile heartland on and around the Central Plain (today called North China Plain) which was the core region of all the ‘Chinese’ dynasties (see Figure 2). *The Huaxia-Chinese* and ‘China Proper’ are inseparable and interlinked concepts, as exemplified by the words *Zhongxia* (中夏) or *Zhonghua* (中华), used during the imperial era. They combine the Central Plain (*zhong*, 中, means ‘centre’) with the *Huaxia* people and their culture and were used to refer interchangeably to both ‘China Proper’ and its population. Since the republican era, *Zhonghua* has been used to refer to all of China and the whole Chinese nation (including all ethnic groups).

²² Chiang Kai-shek 1947, 36.

²³ See Kallio 1999, 11–12.

Thus there was no departure from the logic which had prevailed during the imperial era in regard to defining legitimacy.

Today, China's history is taught in Chinese schools and presented in Chinese museums in a way which emphasizes unity as an underlying common thread. The various 'non-Chinese' tribes and even states that have existed around the land inhabited by the 'Chinese' are depicted as members of the Chinese cultural sphere, thus making them 'minority nationalities' from the start. Academician Tan Qixiang (谭其骧, 1911-1992) wrote in the authoritative *Zhongguo lishi dituji* (中国历史地图集, 1982), "Historical Atlas of China":

When the Qing dynasty had succeeded in unifying the country by the 1750s ... the historical development of several millennia towards establishing China's territorial extent had been completed. All those nationalities which have lived within that territory are historically Chinese nationalities, and all the political entities established by these nationalities are historical parts of China.²⁴

Readers will thus be able to see, in the form of plane maps, the formation and growth a great, unified multi-ethnic nation has experienced, and to see how our ancestors of different nationalities lived as neighbours in human communities and, though there had been separations and unification of political jurisdiction, fared along a long and arduous course through mutual attraction, gradual interchange and amalgamation to finally solidify into the substantiality of a country that has a well-defined territory and fixed boundaries.²⁵

This approach makes it possible to draw the historical outer boundaries of 'China' around all the contesting kingdoms, while encompassing many of the bordering 'non-Chinese' nations as well. Similarly, the periods of division are presented as divisions *within* China, not *of* China. All of this leads the Chinese population to believe that unity truly is the basis for the ruler's legitimacy.

²⁴ *Zhongguo lishi dituji, diyice* (Vol. 1), "General Compiling Principles". See also Ge Jianxiang 2008, 240. – All translations from the Chinese are my own, unless otherwise indicated.

²⁵ *Zhongguo lishi dituji, diyice* (Vol. 1), "Foreword". Translation by the publisher.

Finding ‘China Proper’

The prevailing Chinese historiographic interpretation can be justified by the traditionalist view, according to which China is a cultural formation. Ideally, the Chinese empire was considered to include all areas which acknowledged the superiority of the Chinese civilization and were subjected to paying ritualistic tribute to the one and only Emperor. Culturalistic China was not a state but ‘All-Under-Heaven’ (*Tianxia*, 天下). Several states would sometimes co-exist under the Heaven, but such ‘power-regimes’ were temporary, whereas the ‘value-regime’ of All-Under-Heaven was permanent.²⁶ Even during the periods of division it was the goal of every kingdom to become the next unified empire by subjugating all the others.²⁷ According to this traditionalist view, the culturalistic era lasted through the entire imperial period, whereas today China is faced with the challenge of trying to combine culturalism with nationalism. Lucien Pye has argued that China is a civilization trying to squeeze itself into the form of a nation-state.²⁸

Admittedly, the ideal of a unified All-Under-Heaven and its moralistic connotations are primeval. However, we must ask, which is the cause and which is the consequence? Isn’t it possible that the traditionalist view of an inherently culturalistic China has remained strong due to the historiographical tradition, and not the other way around? As Alistair Iain Johnston has demonstrated, even the foreign

²⁶ Levenson 1965, vol. I, 98–103. Gu Yanwu (顾炎武, 1613–1682), a staunch Ming loyalist, criticized the Manchu rule precisely from a value-based position, saying that the Manchu were not legitimate holders of the Heavenly Mandate because of the harshness of their rule: “To change the ruling family and alter the name of the dynasty brings the kingdom to its end, but abandoning humanness and righteousness so that men begin hunting and devouring each other brings the Empire (and its Heavenly Mandate) to its end.” (*Rizhiliu* XVII, Zheng shi.)

²⁷ That Chinese strategic literature gives preference to deception over force (see Nojonen 2008) may perhaps be partially explained by culturalism. Ideally, All-Under-Heaven belongs to the ruler who is the strongest morally. Therefore, it is better to subjugate other states by such means that create as little suffering and destruction as possible and thus win over the hearts of the conquered populations. From *Mencius* (Jin Xin 11, 14.13): “There are those who have gained the possession of kingdoms without possessing the virtue of humanness, but such people have never been able to gain possession of All-Under-Heaven.”

²⁸ Pye 1992, 235–236.

relations of the Ming dynasty, conventionally seen as an embodiment of peaceful, culturalistic, Confucian foreign politics, were marked by constant warfare.²⁹

Few in China have questioned the prevailing historiographical tradition. However, there are some notable exceptions. Ge Jianxiong (葛剑雄), professor at Fudan University and member of the Chinese People's Political Consultative Conference, has published the book *Tongyi yu fenlie* (统一与分裂, 1998, revised edition 2008, reprint 2009), "Unity and Division", which paints a very controversial picture of China's history. While Ge accepts, as a working hypothesis, that the unity of the whole of China forms the basis for legitimacy, he then asks how this 'unity' should be defined. Obviously, 'the whole of China' is too vague a concept. Ge proposes that unity should be defined by the dynasty's ability to pacify the area of the former Qin dynasty with the North China Plain as the core. In practice, this area is the 'historical China': the area of all major 'Chinese' dynasties (Han, Tang, Song, and Ming), as well as the real extent of the rule of the Republic of China after the nominal reunification in 1928.³⁰ In Western literature, that same area is usually called 'China Proper'. **Figure 2** shows the geographical area of 'China Proper' and the macro regions within it.

Ge does not explicitly refer to 'China Proper'. The concept is heavily contested in China and linked to the Western colonialists' or the Japanese aggressors' desire to carve up China, starting with the territories outside 'China Proper'.³¹ However, for the sake of simplicity, I use the term in this paper even when referring to Ge's text.

Ge questions the view that the different nationalities that have lived outside 'China Proper' must be considered Chinese if they have ever lived within the Chinese cultural sphere (or simply within the

²⁹ Johnston 1998, 236–242.

³⁰ On Chinese maps, the areas of the dynasties mentioned are commonly drawn far larger than what they effectively ruled. The Republic was plagued by warlordism and civil war practically from the outset, and the reunification in 1928 was both short-lived and nominal. As to the regions outside 'China Proper', Tibet proclaimed independence in 1912 and Mongolia in 1921, Xinjiang slipped into the Russian (Soviet) sphere of influence in the late 1920s, while Japan occupied Taiwan in 1895 and Manchuria in 1931.

³¹ See e.g. Zhang Zhirong 2006, 235, 246, and Ma Rong 2009. Apparently, there is no widely accepted corresponding term to 'China Proper' in the Mainland Chinese vocabulary.

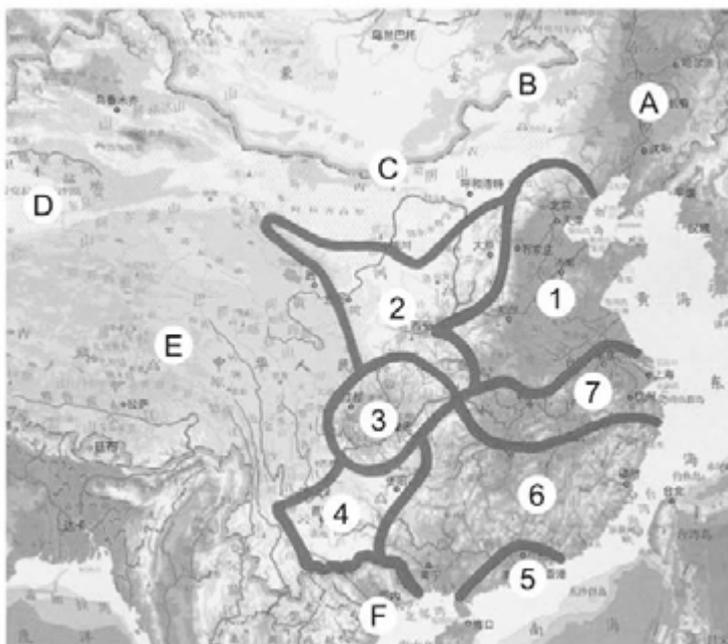


Figure 2. China Proper

‘China Proper’ refers to the fertile heartland which was the core region of all Chinese dynasties, bordered by deserts, steppes, mountains and sea, and consisting of the (1) North China Plain in the north-east, (2) the Loess Plateau in the north-west, (3) the Sichuan Basin in the west, (4) the Yunnan-Guizhou Plateau in the south-west, (5) the Pearl River Delta Plain in the south, (6) the rainy hills and river plains in the south and south-east and (7) the Yangzi Plain in the east. Its surrounding areas include: (A) The Manchurian Plain, (B) the Mongolian-Manchurian Steppe, (C) the Gobi Desert, (D) the Taklamakan Desert, (E) the vast Tibetan Plateau and (F) the Red River Delta.

borders of contemporary China). According to Ge, such a view is ahistorical. He takes Tibet, Taiwan, Mongolia and Xinjiang as examples of territories which are customarily claimed to have been parts of China ‘since time immemorial’. Ge opposes that interpretation and notes that the same logic would dictate opposing the independence of North Korea or Vietnam, territories that at one time or another used to be integral parts of the Chinese empire.³²

³² Ge Jianxiong 2009, 241–243.

Furthermore, Ge Jianxiong demonstrates that from the first unification in 221 BCE until the end of imperial rule in 1911, ‘China Proper’ was united for only 950 years. This accounts for 45% of China’s imperial era. Ge presents the following list of the periods of unity during China’s imperial era:³³

221–209 BCE (during the Qin dynasty)	12 years
108 BCE–22 (during the Western Han dynasty)	130 years
50–184 (during the Eastern Han dynasty)	134 years
280–301 (during the Western Jin dynasty)	21 years
589–616 (during the Sui dynasty)	27 years
630–755 (during the Tang dynasty)	125 years
1279–1351 (during the Yuan dynasty)	72 years
1382–1644 (during the Ming dynasty)	262 years
1683–1850 (during the Qing dynasty)	167 years
Altogether	950 years

Ge further notes that greater China (the area encompassing not only ‘China Proper’ but also Tibet, Sinkiang and other border areas) became unified as late as 1759, and this period of unity lasted for only 81 years. Ge reminds his readers that much of this unity was achieved through coercion and that unification has never been a wholly peaceful process.³⁴

Ge’s analysis demonstrates that the prevailing view of unity as the main trend in Chinese history is nothing more than a myth—in other words, pure politics. The dynastic history is conventionally presented in a manner whereby one dynasty is immediately followed by another without many lapses or overlaps. In reality, there were many periods of overlapping rule. Furthermore, as Ge shows, almost every dynasty had to struggle to gain unity at the beginning of their rule, and many had lost it towards the end of their rule. In addition,

³³ Ibid., 217–218. Ge’s calculation is much more detailed and analytical than the more conventional ones, e.g. by Diana Lary. Lary views the dynasties as indivisible blocks and then differentiates between the united, partly united (“dynasties which ruled at least half of the land mass of China”) and divided dynasties. The results of Lary’s calculation is that China was united for 1,074 years, partly united for 626 years, and disunited for 432 years during the Imperial Era. (Lary 1997, 182.)

³⁴ Ibid., 217–218, 229–230, 234.

Table 1. Periods of unity of China Proper under 'Chinese' and 'non-Chinese' dynasties

#	Periods of unity	Reign (Era)	Dynasty
19	1683–1850	1644–1911	Qing (Manchu)
17	1382–1644	1368–1644	Ming
15	1279–1351	1271–1368	Yuan (Mongol)
		(1234–79)	era of Mongol conquest
		1115–1234	Jin 金 (Jürchen)
13	979–1127	960–1279	Song
			Northern Song*** (960–1127)
			Southern Song (1127–1279)
			Liao (Khitans, 916–1125)
		907–960	Five Dynasties and Ten Kingdoms (Chinese and non-Chinese)
11	630–755	618–907	Tang** (incl. Zhou interregnum 690–705)
9	589–616	581–618	Sui* (Tangut)
		420–581	Northern and Southern Dynasties
		265–420	Jin 晉
7	280–301		Sixteen Kingdoms (mostly non-Chinese, 304–439)
			Western Jin (265–315)
		220–280	Three Kingdoms
5	50–184	206 BCE–	Han
3	108 BCE–22	220	Eastern Han (25–220)
			Western Han (206 BCE–9 and Xin interregnum 9–23)
1	221–209 BCE	221–207 BCE	Qin (culturally non-Chinese, ethnic origin unclear)

KEY

- Chinese rule
- Chinese dynasties during periods of unity**
- Non-Chinese rule
- Non-Chinese dynasties during periods of unity**

Numbers in the # column refer to the numbers in Figure 3.

'Chinese' here refers to the dominant ethnic-cultural group populating China Proper, usually called *Huaxia* when referring to the pre-imperial era and Han when referring to modern times.

The years of unity are based on Ge Jianxiong 2008, 218 (with the exception of Northern Song which is not included on his list).

The interpretations regarding the Sui (listed as non-Chinese), the Tang (listed as Chinese) and the Northern Song (listed as a dynasty which achieved unity) in this table are debatable.

- * The Sui emperors were Tangut. However, the second emperor (ruled 605–618) lost the support of the nomads due to his cultural Sinification initiatives.
- ** The mothers of the first, second and third Tang emperor (ruled successively 618–683) were all non-Chinese (Tangut). Also many members of the aristocracy were non-Chinese.
- *** Northern Song failed to rule the northern-most parts of China Proper.

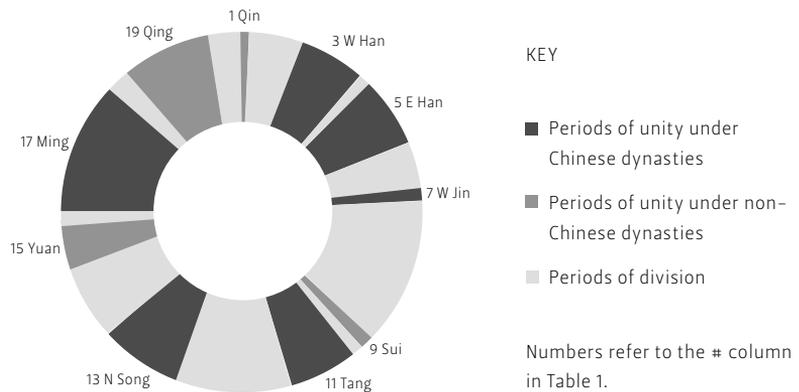


Figure 3. Periods of unity and division of China Proper under ‘Chinese’ and ‘non-Chinese’ dynasties

the Chinese empire struggled to keep the (mostly northern, nomadic or semi-nomadic) neighbouring powers at bay for most of its history, and at least parts of its territory repeatedly fell under foreign rule. From a European perspective, it is only natural to differentiate between the ‘Chinese’ and ‘non-Chinese’ dynasties. Mongols were conquerors in Europe; why should one consider them differently in China?³⁵ Building on Ge’s analysis, I have further differentiated between the periods of unity under ‘Chinese’ and ‘non-Chinese’ dynasties (I have also added Northern Song, which is not on Ge’s list). The result is shown in **Table 1** (which also names some of the reigns during periods of division) and as a graph in **Figure 3**.

According to my interpretation, the total number of years of unity during the imperial era is 1,098, accounting for 52% of the imperial era. The total number of years of unity under ‘Chinese’ dynasties is

³⁵ One could argue that this is a question of perception. Foreign royal houses have been common enough in Europe, and it is often impossible to differentiate between the ‘European’ and ‘non-European’ state-formations (the Ottoman Empire is a case in point). However, religion provided a handy tool for dividing the world into the Christian ‘us’ and the non-Christian ‘others’. Thus Europe (as Christendom) was able to achieve considerable unity in the face of the Ottoman or Mongol threat, for instance.

832 (39%). To put it plainly, China was a unified, ‘Chinese-ruled’ state for only two-fifths of the imperial era.

Both China’s borders today and the idea of unity as the basis for legitimacy are, in fact, based on the rule of the Manchu Qing dynasty. As Ge Jianxiong has shown, the unity within the Qing dynasty borders lasted for less than a century. Whether such a weak precedent can withstand the pressures of the re-emerging Han nationalism or not is a crucial question.

Conspicuously, the Chinese government is investing large sums in support of the Qing History Project, which aims to compile and publish a new, authoritative history of the Qing dynasty. The huge project is slated for completion in 2012. While Norman Ho writes that “it is too much to say that the Chinese government is looking at the Qing History Project as an instrument to reinforce its political legitimacy”³⁶ it is in my opinion safe to say that the ‘correct’ interpretation of history, in particular in regard to the territory of the Qing dynasty, is far from insignificant for the government.

A case in point: The Taiwan issue

The biggest remaining obstacle for greater China’s complete unity or ‘China’s reunification’ is the so-called Taiwan issue. Taiwan, under the rule of the government of the Republic of China, has been a separate entity from the People’s Republic of China ever since 1949, and the state of civil war between the two sides of the Taiwan Strait has not officially ceased. In practice, the economic, cultural and people-to-people relations between the two parties are thriving, but politically the two sides show little signs of détente.

The main reason why the Taiwan issue is so politically sensitive for the communist regime on the Mainland is the belief that unity is the basis of the ruler’s legitimacy. As long as Taiwan is not an integral part of China, the legitimacy of the Communist Party is incomplete. Fortunately, rationality overrules the use of military means to reunite Taiwan with the Mainland. Unfortunately, the Taiwan issue is one where rationality may cease to prevail if the legitimacy of the Communist Party were to be put at stake. Some hawkish scholars even

³⁶ Ho 2009.

state that China's inability to solve the Taiwan issue, which is due to foreign interference, stands in the way of China's modernization.³⁷

According to official Chinese history writing, Taiwan has been an integral part of China "since time immemorial". It is conventionally held that the first recorded landing in Taiwan was made during the Three Kingdoms period, in 230. New expeditions supposedly took place during the Sui dynasty in the seventh century. In the mid-12th century, the Song dynasty may have established a garrison on the Penghu Islands off the west coast of Taiwan, followed by the Yuan and Ming dynasties.³⁸ In reality, however, Taiwan remained outside imperial Chinese jurisdiction until the Qing dynasty, even though Chinese people from the mainland started to immigrate to the island in large numbers in the 1600s. During the same time, the Dutch established extensive colonies on the island. It was not until 1683 that parts of Taiwan were annexed into Fujian Province of the Great Qing Empire as a prefecture.

In regard to the Taiwan issue, Ge Jianxiang again represents unorthodox views. He acknowledges that Taiwan cannot be considered to have been under the rule of any Chinese central government prior to 1683. Ge writes: "To regard [the expeditions during the Three Kingdoms period and the Sui Dynasty] as proof of 'Taiwan being a part of China since time immemorial' is not only ludicrous but ignorant, and actually [the expeditions] prove quite the opposite." If Taiwan had been an integral part of China, what would have been the use of such military operations, asks Ge rhetorically.³⁹

Ge maintains that reunification can be achieved only when the two parties view each other as equally legitimate heirs of One China.⁴⁰ This is clearly not the case today. Ge further warns that time may not be on the side of the reunificationists: history teaches us that what was once one nation and one culture may split into two as time passes and people gradually grow apart.⁴¹

³⁷ See e.g. Liu Dongchao 2008, 83.

³⁸ See e.g. *Taiwan wenti yu Zhongguo tongyi - baipishu* ("White Paper on the Taiwan Issue and the Chinese Reunification"), Taiwan Affairs Office of the State Council, 1993 (http://www.gwyttb.gov.cn/bps/bps_zgty.htm, accessed 23 Apr 2010).

³⁹ Ge Jianxiang 2008, 243.

⁴⁰ *Ibid.*, 251.

⁴¹ *Ibid.*

The Taiwan issue is just one of the challenges related to achieving, maintaining and defining unity in China. It is perhaps the most explosive one, taking into account that the feud between Taiwan and the Mainland has the potential to escalate into an international military conflict between the major powers.

Defining ‘Chinese’ through the others

The question that the leadership of the People’s Republic need to ask themselves is whether the ongoing work to promote nation-building is actually bringing about the desired results. To an outside observer, the answer is clearly negative. The events in the troubled border areas of Tibet and Xinjiang indicate that the Chinese nation is not as harmonious as the central government would like it to be. Especially in regard to the Han, the attempts to emphasize national unity are backfiring, and patriotism is turning into ethnic nationalism.

According to the official rhetoric in the People’s Republic of China, China is home to the Chinese nation (*Zhonghua minzu*, 中华民族), a multi-ethnic family consisting of the dominant Han nationality and fifty-five minority nationalities. Both the invention of the *Zhonghua* nation and the classification of the Han as a distinct ethnic group are modern constructs, dating back to the revolutionaries of the late 19th century.⁴²

Once established in 1912, the Republic recognized five ethnic groups within China: the Han, Hui (i.e. Muslims), Mongols, Manchus, and Tibetans. In the People’s Republic, exemplified by the Soviet-inspired ethnic classifications and ethnicity-based administrative divisions, the number was expanded to fifty-six.⁴³ According to its constitution (Preamble), “[t]he People’s Republic of China is a unitary multi-national state built up jointly by the people of all its nationalities.” Although this formulation implies equality of the nationalities, all the non-Han nationalities are customarily called ‘minority nationalities’ in semi-official parlance.

⁴² Zhang Haiyang 1997, PE74. The term *Zhonghua minzu* was coined by Liang Qichao (梁启超) in 1902. He used the term to refer to all the nationalities within China. (Li Xisuo, “Liang Qichao shi tichu ‘Zhonghua minzu’ chengwei de di’yi ren”, *Renmin wang*, 9 Feb 2006, at <http://theory.people.com.cn/BIG5/49157/49163/4089792.html#>. Accessed 7 Apr 2010.)

⁴³ See Leibold 2010a, 5.

Professor Ma Rong (马戎, Department of Sociology, Peking University) states that “the ‘institutionalization of ethnic groups’ under Mao Zedong (毛泽东) promoted ethnic stratification and tension, and the preferential policies of the last three decades have created ‘tribal collectives’ (*buzu jiheti* 部族集合体), which form new barriers and obstacles to genuine equality and unity”.⁴⁴ He warns that unless China can find a better way of dealing with the ethnic issues, the fate that befell Yugoslavia awaits China, and the enemies of the rise of China will be able to use the ethnic issues as a tool for criticizing the country.⁴⁵

As the official interpretation of history projects the current borders of the People’s Republic into history and calls all those living within those borders members of the *Zhonghua* nation, it simultaneously also projects the existence of the *Zhonghua* nation into antiquity. Of course, this is a falsification, and no such ‘meta-identity’ has arguably ever existed. At most, ‘non-Chinese’ tribes submitted to the hegemony of the ‘Chinese’ state from time to time and became ‘politically Chinese’.

Historically, the legitimacy of the ‘non-Chinese’ dynasties has usually been recognized by their successors. For instance, a dynastic history of the Yuan dynasty was written during the Ming dynasty, thus linking Yuan in the chain of legitimate ruling houses of China. This has been necessary in order to secure the basis for the legitimacy of the successors. In modern China, the ‘non-Chinese’ dynasties are presented with the ‘Chinese’ dynasties as equal components in making up China’s imperial heritage. Naturally, taking into account the multi-ethnic character of the People’s Republic, it would have been unwise to do otherwise.

Lately, critique towards the legitimacy of the ‘non-Chinese’ dynasties has flared up at grassroots level. Voices have emerged that wish to make a distinction between the ‘Chinese’ and ‘non-Chinese’ dynasties in Chinese historiography.⁴⁶ In particular, the ‘Chineseness’ of the Mongol and Manchu dynasties is called into question in numerous internet debates. As one commentator put it:

⁴⁴ Leibold 2010a, 19.

⁴⁵ *Ibid.*, 20. Ma Rong 2009.

⁴⁶ Often, ‘non-Chinese’ are referred to as *yizu* (异族) or ‘foreign race’ and ‘Chinese’ as *bentu* (本土) or ‘our country(men)’. The term *bentu* is also used to connote ‘China Proper’.

During the era of the Mongol Yuan dynasty, China was enslaved and colonized by the Mongol Empire together with Persia, Koryo, the Rus' and others. ... Yet this kind of a regime is propagated to have been a “united, multi-ethnic state” by the official education system, misleading many Chinese to even think that Genghis Khan was Chinese. How tragic!⁴⁷

This discourse is closely related to the search for ‘Chineseness’ as a new cultural identity. While the government is promoting ‘Traditional Learning’ (*Guoxue*, 国学, sometimes translated more literally as ‘national learning’; see Chapter II) and hoping to make it the spiritual foundation of the ‘Chinese nation’, an average Han Chinese youth views Traditional Learning exclusively as his/her own heritage, and has found in its promotion a way to discover his/her own cultural identity.⁴⁸ Many minority nationalities have their distinctive, traditional costumes and festivals, but not the Han, whose culture and heroes have become indistinguishable from the all-encompassing *Zhonghua* culture and heroes. Thus it is understandable how the government-promoted *Zhonghua* patriotism would have been transformed into Han nationalism as a counter-reaction or why the Han Chinese would have started searching for their identity in an attempt to acquire one of their own.⁴⁹

A prime example of this identity search is the movement to revitalize traditional Chinese clothing, dubbed *hanfu* (汉服) or Han clothing, and to give the pre-Qing-era clothing status as the Chinese national costume. The movement reached its heyday before the Beijing Olympics when one hundred scholars jointly suggested that *hanfu* should be designated the official costume of the Chinese athletes in the Games.⁵⁰ The movement still appears to be popular among younger generations especially in the cities in southern China, as well as in overseas Chinese communities.

⁴⁷ “Guanyu yizu zhengquan”, by an unidentified writer on 17 Jan 2008, at <http://hi.baidu.com/chosan/blog/item/afa785d1b524fd3c9b502734.html>. Accessed 7 Apr 2010.

⁴⁸ See Zhang Min 2007, 166, and Ma Rong 2009.

⁴⁹ Mikael Mattlin calls the phenomenon where a cultural group is mobilized to defend their identity against the threat of homogenization, ‘cultural fetishism’. (Mattlin 2001, 174.)

⁵⁰ “Baiming xuezhe changyi hanfu wei Aoyunhui liyi fuzhuang”, at http://news.ifeng.com/mainland/200704/0405_17_97909.shtml. Accessed 10 Aug 2009. The *hanfu* movement is well presented in Zhang Min 2007. See also Leibold 2010a, 11–14.

The movement, and other similar examples of identity-building, are often associated with ethnicity-based Han nationalism or even its more extreme form, called Han chauvinism (*da Hanzu zhuyi*, 大汉族主义) in Chinese parlance, which are by no means new phenomena.⁵¹ In 1953, Chairman Mao warned of the dangers of Han chauvinism, in an internal party directive. According to the directive, Han chauvinism was lurking almost everywhere and was creating conflicts in many minority regions. Mao labelled Han chauvinism as reactionary and reflective of the Guomindang (Nationalist Party) way of thinking.⁵² Mao's warning, however, seems to have gone largely unheeded. Han chauvinism has continued to be an undercurrent in the communist way of thinking as well.

Among the Han Chinese population, the reasons for the rise of ethnic Han nationalism range from envy towards the special rights given to ethnic minorities with regard to university intake or birth control to racial mistrust fuelled, among other things, by the 'war against terrorism' targeting Muslim extremists, which also affects China's Xinjiang.⁵³

As is to be expected in today's world, the main forum for grassroots nationalism is the internet. In China, the nationalist flagship website

⁵¹ The compilers of a famous prose anthology, *Guwen guanzhi*, produced at the beginning of the Qing dynasty, omitted all texts written during 'non-Chinese' dynasties. This may have subtly expressed their dissent towards the legitimacy of the Manchu rulers. (Kallio 2009.)

⁵² Mao Zedong 1977, 75–76. The rallying slogan of the founding fathers of Guomindang was "to expel the Tartar fiends (*Dalu*, 鞑虏) and to revive the *Zhonghua* nation". Chiang Kai-shek wanted to downplay that idea, choosing instead to propagate the notion that the Manchu are just one 'clan' of the Chinese nation. (Chiang Kai-shek 1947, 30, 50).

⁵³ Common racist themes, such as the demise of 'our race', can also be found. A writer on www.sciencenet.cn calculates that by 2039, the number of minority nationality youth will exceed the number of Han youth, which as a consequence will turn the Han into a minority. (Wang Luoke, "Jihua shengyu zhengce dui weilai Zhongguo renkou minzu yu zongzu goucheng de yingxiang," at www.sciencenet.cn/m/user_content.aspx?id=30596. Accessed 26 Mar 2010.)

is Hanwang.⁵⁴ Hanwang's goal is defined as the rejuvenation of the Han civilization.⁵⁵ According to Hanwang, the site aims to help the growth of an individual's self-awareness and knowledge about the Han culture so that s/he may realize his/her 'Hanishness' (*hanbenwei*, 汉本位). That is the "pure bloodline" and cultural heritage of the *Huaxia* ancestors.⁵⁶

One indicator of the rising Han nationalism is the discussion related to the book by writer Lü Jiamin (吕嘉民, writing under the pen name Jiang Rong, 姜戎), entitled *Wolf Totem (Lang tuteng* in the original, 狼图腾) and published in 2004.⁵⁷ In the lengthy postscript to his book, written in the form of 'lectures and discussions', Lü argues that the Chinese civilization would not have been able to prosper without regular 'blood transfusions' from the nomads of the steppes, the Jurchen, Mongol and Manchu. "Objectively, the great dynasties of Sui and Tang would not have come into existence without the preceding long-term, wide blood transfusions."⁵⁸ "[E]specially the nearly century-long blood transfusion from the Mongols and the two-and-a-half-centuries-long blood transfusion from the Manchu made it possible for the *Zhonghua* nation to endure till modern times, preserving their land, language and race."⁵⁹

⁵⁴ The website was discontinued after the ethnic riots in the summer of 2009, but has reopened again at www.hanminzu.com. James Leibold discusses the role of Hanwang and other forms of Chinese grassroots ethnic nationalism in two recent articles (Leibold 2010a and 2010b). There are also web posts which may be seen as a counter-reaction towards the Hanwang. For instance, one blog states that it aims to "help the Manchus find their place in the world and to introduce the Manchus to the world" (http://www.mmmca.com/blog_ak87/p/172108.html, accessed 26 Apr 2010). A post on that website argues that a pure Han nation has never existed, but the amalgamation of different ethnic groups has always taken place even on the Central Plain; "it would be best to admit that a Han nationality has never existed." This argument is probably based on a fabricated news piece (see fn. 70).

⁵⁵ According to Hanwang, the success of the *hanfu* movement has been the first step in an overall rejuvenation. Many proponents of the *hanfu* movement have, however, distanced themselves from the Han chauvinist discourse.

⁵⁶ Information aimed at prospective site administrators from 3 April 2009 at <http://www.hanminzu.com/bbs/viewthread.php?tid=247912&extra=page%3D1>. Accessed 26 Apr 2010.

⁵⁷ The book is discussed in some detail in James Leibold 2010c.

⁵⁸ Jiang Rong 2004, 382 (postscript).

⁵⁹ Jiang Rong 2004, 395–396 (postscript).

Lü compares the Han Chinese ‘sheep’ unfavourably with the dynamic, imaginative, free and even democratic ‘wolves’ of the steppes, whose way of life resembles that of real wolves.

The free, independent, bold and indomitable character of the steppe wolves is based on their superior nature [in contrast to dogs, which cannot survive without protection from humans]. The same applies to humans: if a nation does not possess high capabilities or if its character is weak, it is futile for that nation to dream of achieving independence, freedom, democracy, prosperity or strength.⁶⁰

Confucianism and feudalistic autocracy castrated and suppressed man’s wolfishness, thus making [the *Zhonghua* people] altogether sheepish, backward and weak, and led them into a blind alley. ... The way out for the *Zhonghua* nation can only be found in properly releasing man’s wolfishness while simultaneously controlling and mastering it by the only possible means, namely real democracy and the rule of law, and discarding false rubber-stamp democracy.⁶¹

This ethos closely resembles the 1980’s television series *River Elegy* (*Heshang*, 河殇), which criticized the Chinese ‘inland’ and indrawn culture and extolled the Western ‘oceanic’ and enterprising societies.⁶² Lü’s alter ego in the *Wolf Totem*, Chen Zhen, says:

When walking on the road of civilization, the westerners maintain the half-wildness of man, whereas the *Huaxia* people stick to the ‘un-wildness’ of man and walk on a ploughman’s road of civilization. Speaking metaphorically, the westerners walk on the road of ‘civilized wolves’ whereas the *Huaxia* people walk on the road of ‘civilized sheep’.⁶³

⁶⁰ Jiang Rong 2004, Chapter 24, 241. This excerpt is missing from the translation by Howard Goldblatt (The Penguin Press, New York 2008), which appears to be abridged. The postscript is also omitted from the translation.

⁶¹ Jiang Rong 2004, 402 (postscript).

⁶² See e.g. Blum & Jensen 2002, 9.

⁶³ Jiang Rong 2004, 366 (postscript).

Lü's polemics aroused heated debate, which hasn't subsided. The counter-argument, expressed in many blog posts, states that the 'non-Chinese' conquerors are to blame for China's gradual weakening after the prosperous Song dynasty and the eventual humiliation by the Western colonial powers. The Mongol and Manchu are accused of having massacred millions of Han Chinese.⁶⁴ One Chinese blogger, writing in English, laments:

With lots of massacres, Manchu controlled the south. ... Nowadays many people think Qing's rulers [*sic*] loved Han's culture [*sic*] and kept ancient Chinese books, but in fact, they destroyed Han's culture and distorted Chinese books and proprieties [*sic*], and they destroyed the soul of Chinese people. Age-old Central Nation was destroyed, Age-old Huaxia Civilization was destroyed. ... And most horribly, the soul of Huaxia was destroyed.⁶⁵

Han nationalism as a phenomenon forces us to ask whether 'Hanishness' is a primordial *identity* or an acquired *identification*.⁶⁶ The culturalistic view of Chinese history implies that 'non-Chinese' may become 'Chinese' through cultural indoctrination.⁶⁷ Thus, to speak the Han language and follow the Han customs would make one Han. However, the creation of the ethnic groupings in the Republic and the People's Republic has made the Han an ethnic group. The jargon on Hanwang clearly implies that one can only be born Han.

The situation is complex. While the Han are officially regarded as an ethnic group, the official language of the People's Republic is called

⁶⁴ See Leibold 2010c for a summary of two representative writings on the Hanwang portal.

⁶⁵ Jiang Yike: "The Downfall of the Last Chinese Empire—The Loss of the Huaxia Civilization", at <http://www.ourorient.com/articles/rerelations/loss.htm>. Accessed 26 Apr 2010. Similar texts in Chinese abound on different websites. There are opposing views as well, which present the Yuan dynasty as the saviour of China's territorial unity or the Qing dynasty as the greatest dynasty in Chinese history.

⁶⁶ Cf. Mattlin 2001, 171.

⁶⁷ Confucius is believed to have said: "When barbarians come to China, they must be sinicized." Actually, this is a culturalist misinterpretation of a quotation in a writing by the great Tang dynasty scholar Han Yu (韩愈, 768–824). See Kallio 2005, 15.

Hanyu, the language of the Han.⁶⁸ In English, that language is called Chinese, but all the people living in China, Han or otherwise, may also be called Chinese by virtue of their being Chinese nationals.⁶⁹

According to Chinese geneticists, all Han Chinese today have a coherent genetic structure. This coherence is said to be the result of millennia of fusion, assimilation and migratory waves (from the north to the south).⁷⁰ According to prominent anthropologist Fei Xiaotong (费孝通, 1910–2005), the Han population has always formed the core of the fusion process.⁷¹ This view is supported by the culturalistic explanation: the superiority of the civilization of the Central Plain—the *Huaxia* or *Zhongxia*—has caused the other peoples to gravitate towards the centre.

Despite the genetics, the view of the Han as an ethnic group has been questioned by Western scholars. The relative sizes of the Han population and the second biggest ethnic group are in a different league altogether. As Thomas S. Mullaney writes: “To compare Han to any given non-Han [ethnic group] is in certain respects akin to comparing a phylum to a class, a class with an order, or an order with a family—that is, across entirely different taxonomic

⁶⁸ In principle, *Hanyu* refers jointly to all Chinese regional variants (dialects, regionallects), including not only the most spoken variant, Mandarin, but also Cantonese, Shanghaiese etc. In practice, however, *Hanyu* refers especially to standardized Mandarin (officially called *Putonghua* in the Mainland, *Guoyu* in Taiwan and *Huayu* in Singapore and among overseas Chinese). The term *Hanyu* is rarely used outside the People’s Republic.

⁶⁹ The terms used for the Chinese (people) in Chinese include *Hanren* (used in the PRC to refer to the Han Chinese), *Huaren* (used especially outside the PRC to refer to Han Chinese; also carries a culturalist connotation of *Zhonghua* or ‘all Chinese’) and *Zhongguoren* (principally a political term referring to Chinese nationals, but as *Zhongguo* originally referred to the ‘Central Kingdoms’, i.e. the *Huaxia* states of the Central Plain, the term *Zhongguoren* carries such a strong cultural-ethnic undertone that not all minority people are willing to identify themselves as *Zhongguoren*).

⁷⁰ Bo Wen et al. 2004. Widely publicized news reports in February 2010 of a DNA study by the Chinese Academy of Sciences, which allegedly demonstrated that no ‘pure’ Han exist and that the whole concept of the Han as a genetically defined ethnic group must thus be called into question, are apparently baseless. The researcher quoted in the news reports says no such study exists. (See <http://www.tianya.cn/publicforum/content/worldlook/1/253431.shtml>. Accessed 20 Apr 2010.)

⁷¹ Leibold 2009.

orders⁷².”Linguistically, the Han can be divided into speakers of several ‘regionalects’ (to use the term coined by John DeFrancis⁷³), often misleadingly called dialects. Though language is not necessarily related to ethnicity, China is known to have been both ethnically and culturally diverse during the first unification and long thereafter.

It is probably fair to say that although the ethnicity of the Han has a genetic basis, being conscious of one’s ‘Hanishness’ is an acquired identification more than a primordial identity. It has been possible to identify oneself ethnically as a Han for just over a century, but the ethnic divide is firmly based on the culturalistic view, which made a distinction between the cultured ‘us’, the *Huaxia* of the Central Kingdom, on the one hand and the uncivilized ‘others’ of the surrounding areas on the other.⁷⁴ This view dates back well over two millennia. As Lothar von Falkenhausen writes:

One fundamental yet gradual tendency in social development during the Zhou period [ca. 1045–256 BCE] was the subsumption of the clans under a larger unit that we may somewhat anachronistically call the “Hua Xia nation,” and the exclusion of the “Barbarians” from that nation. ... The emerging “Hua Xia” supra-clan entity was endogamous: marriage to unacculturated “Others”, though apparently not proscribed, was not encouraged.⁷⁵

Naturally, the way history is presented is always a conscious choice. Although the Han is not explicitly a name for a race by any definition, it implicitly becomes conceptualized as one due to the historiographic tradition which stresses the fundamental differences between ‘us’ and ‘the others’. Calling all the non-Han nationalities collectively ‘the minority nationalities’ further cements this age-old view. The

⁷² Mullaney 2009.

⁷³ DeFrancis 1984, 57.

⁷⁴ From time immemorial, the Chinese have made a distinction between themselves and the ‘barbarians’, i.e. between the *Hua* (or *Xia*) and the *Yi* (夷).

⁷⁵ Falkenhausen 2006, 167.

racial discourse has a long history in China.⁷⁶ As elsewhere in the world, it has always included an element of racism, the belief that “racial differences produce an inherent superiority of a particular race.”⁷⁷ The racist undercurrent in Chinese society is especially prevalent in regard to black Africans.⁷⁸

Today, the claims of superiority are most often heard on the part of the Han (which is not to say that all Han are racist nor that there are no racists among any of the other nationalities). Race is a social construct, and it is necessary to acknowledge the existence of the racist discourse in order to see the full scope of the sensitivities related to ethnic relations in China.⁷⁹

Unity versus pluralism

Professor Victoria Tin-bor Hui from the University of Notre Dame has written:

⁷⁶ According to Frank Dikötter (1992), the discourse on ‘race’ appeared in China at the end of the nineteenth century and dominated the nationalist ideology at the beginning of the twentieth century. The discourse was not so much centred on the Han versus the other nationalities as on the ‘yellow race’ (or the Han together with the ‘inner barbarians’) versus the ‘outer barbarians’ (the Westerners and Africans).

⁷⁷ Definition from the *Merriam Webster Online Dictionary* (<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/racism>, accessed 26 May 2010).

⁷⁸ The racist riot targeting black students in Nanjing, in 1988, is perhaps the most striking recent example. It is notable that a person of (supposed) African origin is invariably called a ‘black’ (*heiren*, 黑人), which in the Chinese context is a derogatory expression. It is quite possible that the insistence among some Chinese scholars to regard Peking Man as an indigenous ancestor of the Chinese is due to the reluctance to accept an ‘African’ origin. (See Schmalzer 2008, 277.)

⁷⁹ See López 2000, 165: “I define ‘race’ as a vast group of people loosely bound together by historically contingent, socially significant elements of their morphology and/or ancestry. I argue that race must be understood as a *sui generis* social phenomenon in which contested systems of meaning serve as the connections between physical features, faces, and personal characteristics. ... Race is neither an essence nor an illusion, but rather an ongoing, contradictory, self-reinforcing, plastic process”

While a monolithic [Central Kingdom] tended to repress dissent, dominate its neighbors and hinder trade, a plural [Central Kingdom] was more likely to make concessions to society, develop international law and promote trade. ... In sum, Chinese history is not unlike European history in experiencing both *realpolitik* and *idealpolitik* elements. While China has a long history of domination and coercion, it also has a deeply rooted liberal tradition. ... This liberal tradition ... includes not just classical Confucianism at the philosophical level but, far more importantly, state-society bargains, diplomatic relations and commercial activities on the ground.⁸⁰

Similar voices also emerge from within Chinese society. Related discussions are mushrooming. James Leibold maintains that there are “several latent fissures in the very composition of the Chinese nation-state” and alternatives to “China as a ‘unitary, multi-ethnic state’” are being actively sought. “The Internet revolution and the dramatic changes unleashed in reform-era Chinese society have opened up new spaces—some elitist, some populist and some largely obscured—for the articulation of alternative national imaginaries, ensuring that the Party-state no longer holds a monopoly on the symbols, categories and meanings associated with being ‘Chinese’”, concludes Leibold.⁸¹

Ge Jianxiong writes very positively about the advantages of decentralization during the periods of division. According to him, periods of division opened up avenues for exploiting remote regions which remained neglected during the periods of unity due to their low importance, as seen from the capital, and to their physical distance from the heartland. Periods of division presented opportunities for the talented to find positions in the service of the regional rulers. Periods of division also witnessed great technological and intellectual advancements, whereas unity often equalled stagnation. New ideas flourished and new schools of thought were formed due to the

⁸⁰ Hui 2008, 53–65, 60, 63. By “a plural Central Kingdom” the author means that *Zhongguo* referred originally, before the first unification, to the ‘Central Kingdoms’ in the plural.

⁸¹ Leibold 2010a, 24.

freedom made possible by the lack of a strong, ideologically unitarian government.⁸²

Ge is cautious enough not to sound like a ‘splittist’. Instead, he asserts that unity will prevail in China as long as the policies of reform and opening up continue. Ge emphasizes that he is not critical of unity, but of the excessive practices used to gain and maintain unification and centralized rule.⁸³ According to him, today’s China is no longer unified under one ruler or one ruling family but under one nation. That means that unity is needed not because it is in the interests of the ruler but because it is in the interests of the people. Periods of division were natural in the old days, due to the coercive measures used to gain and maintain unity. In contrast, the positive values of the periods of division can today be found through increasing democracy and local autonomy, Ge concludes.⁸⁴

Diana Lary points out that one reason why the central government today is promoting “the credo of historical unity” is the regions’ desire for increased autonomy. While some provinces have become richer, they have also become more independent and unwilling to have the central government dictate that they must allocate part of their revenues to the poorer provinces. A “major recrudescence of regional power” is a fact in China today, and such development may become at odds with the aims of the central government.⁸⁵

Ge Jianxiong is not alone in questioning unity as the one and only road to peace and prosperity. Dissident political scientist Yan Jiaqi (严家其, formerly at the Chinese Academy of Social Sciences) advocates a federal-democratic model which would simultaneously increase local democracy and maintain national cohesion despite different disintegrating trends.⁸⁶

Confucian revivalist Lin Anwu (林安梧, Professor of Chinese Literature at the National Taiwan Normal University) claims that there is an important distinction between unity by force and unity by common will. Lin claims that the unity during the imperial era was (and in today’s People’s Republic is) carried out through force,

⁸² Ge Jianxiong 2009, 171–172, 185–188.

⁸³ *Ibid.*, 189, 246.

⁸⁴ *Ibid.*, 246–249.

⁸⁵ Lary 1997, 183.

⁸⁶ Yan Jiaqi 1992.

whereas the original Confucian ideal is ‘pluralist unity’ which is based not on force but on virtue. In the best spirit of the traditional culturalism, Lin favours the latter and calls for the realization of ‘Cultural China’, a meta-structure under which all Chinese political entities could coexist.⁸⁷ Both Yan Jiaqi’s federalist model and Lin Anwu’s Cultural China have been discussed as possible solutions to the Taiwan issue.⁸⁸

A Hunan-based journalist, Xiao Jiansheng (肖建生), discusses why China’s politics have never undergone a transition from centralization to pluralism in his recent book, entitled *Zhongguo wenming de fansi* (中国文明的反思, 2007), “Reflecting on the Chinese Civilization”. The book is a compact political and social history of China from remote antiquity up to the republican revolution.

Xiao maintains that the ‘Grand Unity’ (*Da yitong*) achieved by the First Emperor of Qin was by no means a positive historical achievement. On the contrary, sticking to the Grand Unity gave absolute power to the emperor which, in turn, gave way to absolute corruption. Under such rule, the people were treated as slaves and as beasts of burden. Furthermore, according to Xiao, the unification put an end to the tradition of sophisticated diplomatic relations which had existed prior to the unification. After the unification, China had no neighbours with whom to engage in diplomatic relations, and therefore the country’s image became one of a solitary centre of the world. China was seen to equate to All-Under-Heaven. Such subsequent dynasties during which China turned similarly inwards and saw no reason to trade or compete in development with any other power were consequently periods of backwardness, concludes Xiao.⁸⁹

Xiao uses the Song dynasty as an example of a period when the people were able to enjoy the benefits of pluralism precisely because China was not unified. Xiao reminds his readers of how the Song dynasty is often looked down upon as a weak dynasty which barely survived under the pressures from its northern adversaries. It was because of the weakness of the Song dynasty that China eventually fell under Mongol rule, according to the conventional way of thinking. In contrast, Xiao uses the Song dynasty as an example of

⁸⁷ Lin Anwu 1994.

⁸⁸ See also Kallio & Mattlin 2004.

⁸⁹ Xiao Jiansheng 2007, 54, 71–81, 84, 89.

a time when China was ruled in a humane and just way. According to Xiao, Song China was a liberal, open and pluralistic society. There were no demands for ideological unity or orthodoxy. Philosophy, science, arts and education flourished in such an atmosphere. Trade also thrived and the society had an international flavour. Even a large number of Jews found a home in Song China at a time when they were not welcome in many other parts of the world, remarks Xiao.⁹⁰

Xiao steers clear of advocating that China should be turned into a Western style, multi-party democracy. Instead, he presents the Song dynasty as an important example of benevolent centralized rule. He claims that history indicates a way to make China's political system more humane, while keeping the centralized rule of the Communist Party intact.⁹¹

In the "Foreword" to his history book, Xiao Jiansheng questions the correctness of the conventional understanding of history:⁹²

Some people refuse to reflect thoroughly on their own history, and thus they remain unable to recognize correctly the achievements of the Chinese civilization and unable to absorb the truly useful lessons from history. ... For example, the Confucians in ancient China ... promoted such ideas as "the people are important, the ruler is unimportant", "rule humanely, love the people" and "the people are the basis of the state". These, originally so good, thoughts and political ideals were negated for the longest time. Instead, people approved of and carried on the ideology of violence and autocracy and later followed the bad customs⁹³ of the outlaws in the wild.

⁹⁰ Ibid., 2, 128–129, 165–166. A similar appraisal of the Song era can be found in Lary 1997, 181.

⁹¹ Xiao Jiansheng 2007, 5, 352.

⁹² The following three fragments are translated from Xiao Jiansheng 2007, 1–6.

⁹³ 'The customs of the outlaws in the wild' is *jianghu xiqi* (江湖习气) in the original, literally 'the spirit of the rivers and lakes (i.e. the way of life in the backwaters and wilderness). The phrase implies cunningness and sleekness and refers both to swindlers and charlatans as well as to the outlawed swordsmen who often feature in popular literature as Robin Hood-esque people's heroes. Here the phrase may refer to the jackal-like strategy of survival of the fittest, which has marked the periods of rural unrest during the Imperial Era or the Cultural Revolution and appearances of unchecked capitalism in modern times.

Even today many people view the violent unification of [China] by the First Emperor of Qin and the consequent establishment of a tightly unified imperial autocracy as a great historical achievement. But have they not thought that if this really was such a grand achievement, then why has China not seen the emergence of such great thinkers as Laozi, Confucius or Mencius ever since Qin conquered [the rest of China]?

Xiao then goes on to discuss the relation between Chinese and Western culture, and draws the conclusion that they are not necessarily far apart:

Everyone is today saying that we should revitalize the great Chinese culture, but have those who keep saying that really thought, what is this great Chinese culture? ... I feel it is necessary to take democracy, the rule of law, liberty and human rights, among others, as criteria of modern civilization, in order to be able to reflect upon the history of China's civilization in a systematic and thorough manner.

One very practical question ... is how to reform China's political system so that it suits the rapidly developing economic situation in our country, that is, how to base our society on democracy, rule of law, equality, liberty and harmony? ... One must frankly admit that there is no political system in the world which is all good and flawless. However, at least from today's perspective, the Western democratic model is relatively advanced ... and of universal value. ...

Xiao ends the "Foreword" with careful formulations that aim at political correctness:

The problem is that in China, a country with a vast territory, a large population and thousands of years of history as an autocratic state, it would be unwise to rashly carry out reforms equalling a total westernization. ... Therefore, in order to reform the political system in today's China, we must draw experiences and lessons from the Chinese history. Only in that way may we find a successful political model which suits the national characteristics of China and the psyche of the Chinese people.

It is a telling sign that Xiao's book was banned immediately after its publication in 2007.⁹⁴ The Party-state tries to defend its monopoly in defining the meanings of history and 'Chineseness'. The Communist Party is apparently acting upon the belief that whoever controls history, controls China. This indicates that the Party will continue to resort to coercive measures, and the space for pluralism and liberalism will remain limited.

⁹⁴ "HK sells a book banned in China", by Vaudine England, BBC News, Hong Kong, at <http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/8278014.stm>. Accessed 28 Sep 2009. Why Ge Jianxiong's book hasn't met with a similar fate is anyone's guess. Perhaps his established status both as an academic and as a politician helps.

Chapter II

The revival of tradition

Introduction to Chapter II

This chapter presents the efforts by the Party-state to reinvent tradition. It aims to shed light on the ongoing dialogue between modernity and tradition, communism and Confucianism, internal and external orientation, ideology and practice. The focus is on the efforts of the Party-state to turn selected elements of the Chinese traditional schools of thought into a new synthesis, emphasizing harmony and patriotism, called Traditional Learning. This chapter also illustrates how Confucianism is deeply intertwined with both Traditional Learning and Chinese communism.

Tradition, especially Confucianism, which had been the school of thought favoured by the emperors and the ruling scholar-official class, came under fierce attack in the early 20th century among the revolutionaries, who aimed to put an end to the imperial system and to “Save the Nation”. However, the relationship between Confucianism and communism has always been complex. The Chinese communists adopted the Confucian ideal society, called the Great Community, as the goal of the communist revolution. At the same time, Confucius was condemned as a feudal aristocrat and a reactionary.

When communism in its fanatical, Maoist form started to fade away in the late 1970s and early 1980s, traditional values such as respect for education became fashionable again. It was concluded that the correct elements of Confucianism outweigh its incorrect elements. However, an outright, overall rehabilitation of Confucius was and still is impossible for the Communist Party, which sees itself as the direct descendant of the early anti-imperial movement.

Alarmed by the city-dwellers going onto the streets demanding democracy at a time when communism was collapsing in Europe, the Communist Party began promoting traditional culture in order to steer the people away from Western liberalism. At the time, some other Asian states were similarly promoting so-called Asian values.

During the last two decades, the term Traditional Learning has established itself as the designation for the amalgamation of China's traditional culture and philosophy and the counterpart of 'Western learning'.

The prevailing slogan of the Chinese Communist Party is "building a Socialist Harmonious Society". The concept of harmony is most often traced back to Confucian texts, and it is frequently said that building socialist harmony requires the fusion of Marxism and Traditional Learning. The Party-state is keen to present itself as the torch-bearer of Traditional Learning as it is a young 'dynasty' and needs to show itself as the inevitable pinnacle of historical development. Traditional Learning also offers the means to move away from Maoist communism spiritually.

Confucianism occupies a central position in Traditional Learning, and most of the manifestations of Traditional Learning are Confucian in nature, or at least in appearance. There are Confucius Institutes all over the world and Confucius's birthday is once again being observed. The most striking example is the plan to build a new 'cultural capital' for China at his birthplace. Interestingly, the project was conceived as a propaganda tool to win over the sympathies of Taiwanese compatriots.

However, it would be an exaggeration to call every aspect of Chinese tradition or culture 'Confucian'. On the other hand, although it can be argued that the revolutions in the 20th century have effectively broken the cultural continuum that Traditional Learning represents, it would be unfair to disregard all modern manifestations of Confucianism as Disney World-esque artificialities. Its instrumental usefulness aside, the intriguing question is, how viable is Traditional Learning (with Confucianism at its heart): can it really fill the ideological vacuum by virtue of its substance? In other words, can Traditional Learning become an engine of spiritual enlightenment?

From the point of view of intellectual history, it has been argued that China's drive for modernization and Saving the Nation during the last century has suppressed everything that has not been instrumental to development, including societal ideals of enlightenment, such as freedom, democracy or tolerance. Today, it seems that the Party-state wishes to reinvent Chinese tradition as 'harmony', which is used merely as a euphemism for 'stability' and 'unity'.

It is somehow expected of the Confucians that they should be enlightened individuals who work for the betterment of society and maintain their integrity even at the expense of their self-interests. Confucians should be ‘public intellectuals’. Such idealism seems at odds with the trends to make Confucianism—either by itself or as an element in Traditional Learning—into a religion of sorts, as advocated by some dissident thinkers, or a dogmatized ideology to be merged with communism.

The failure of the revolutionaries to uproot Confucianism

As the school of thought favoured by the emperors and the ruling scholar-official class, Confucianism stood for orthodoxy during the imperial era. For that reason, many early reformists and republicans in the late 19th and early 20th century attacked Confucianism mercilessly.

The anti-Manchu activist Zhang Binglin (章炳麟, 1868–1936), whom the communists revere as an early revolutionary, stated in 1904 that China’s lack of enterprise, which kept the country under the yoke of the Manchu and the colonial powers, was due to the Confucian emphasis on authority and conservatism.⁹⁵ Zhang favoured other classical schools of thought, such as Mohism (the school of Mozi), and promoted Traditional Learning (*Guoxue*) instead, meaning traditional Chinese philosophies by and large as opposed to the ‘Western’ value system, as the way to save the nation.⁹⁶ Saving the Nation, or National Salvation, *jiu guo* (救国)—defending (or redefining) the national integrity and dignity—was the main goal of the reformists and revolutionaries in late 19th and early 20th century China.

The mouthpiece of the New Culture Movement which flourished during the first decade of the new republic, *Xin shiji* (“New Century”), published several articles attacking Confucianism. One from 1907 stated:

Confucius provided the foundations for autocratic government and bitterly poisoned our fellow countrymen for over two thousand years. ... I say that if the people of the world want to

⁹⁵ Shimada 1990, 115.

⁹⁶ *Ibid.*, 14, 111.

partake of happiness, they must first destroy superstition; and, if the Chinese people want to enjoy happiness, they must first carry out a [revolution overthrowing Confucianism].⁹⁷

This same spirit marked the culmination of the New Culture Movement, the May 4th Movement in 1919. It arose from disappointment towards the Versailles Treaty, which had awarded the German concessions on Shandong peninsula to Japan. China's weakness and inability to claim her rights was attributed to traditional values, in particular Confucianism. Two western gentlemen, 'Mr Science' and 'Mr Democracy', were called in to overthrow Confucius. Nationalism, not based on the old culturalist values but seeking to make China a nation among nations, grew stronger. The founding mythology of the People's Republic presents the May 4th Movement as a revolutionary, anti-imperialist and anti-feudal movement which laid the ideological foundation for the Chinese Communist Party.

Nevertheless, the relationship between Confucianism and revolution has always been complex. On the eve of the republican revolution, reformer and restorationist Kang Youwei (康有为, 1858–1927) presented Confucius in a very positive light, quite unlike Zhang Binglin. According to Kang, Confucius was a democratic reformer and a prophet of the age of Great Community (or Universal Commonwealth, *Datong*, 大同), the third and final stage in the traditional view of historical progress.⁹⁸ Kang described this utopia as an age when national frontiers and social classes disappear and universal peace prevails.

Kang published his views in a book entitled *Datong shu* in 1917, which instantly became very influential. The Chinese communists equated the Marxist utopia with the Great Community, and the young Mao Zedong (1896–1976) said in a private letter that achieving the Great Community was his target.⁹⁹ In 1949, speaking as the leader

⁹⁷ Translated and quoted in *ibid.*, 137–138.

⁹⁸ Originally, *Datong* was a golden age which had presumably existed in the distant past and was then followed by worse times. The goal of Confucius was to show the way 'back to the future' and to help the people return to the golden age.

⁹⁹ "‘Datong’ lixiang yu Shehuizhuyi zai Zhongguo de chuanbo" by Wang Suli, *Renminwang* website, at <http://theory.people.com.cn/GB/49157/49163/4466836.html>. Accessed 30 Apr 2010.

of the Communist Party, he stated that the goal of communism in China was to eliminate class and to realize the Great Community. Mao also said that while Kang Youwei had not known how the Great Community could be reached, communism now provided the way.¹⁰⁰

Despite the equation of the communist utopia and the Confucian ideal of the Great Community, there are good grounds to condemn Confucianism from the viewpoint of socialist ideology. Confucius himself was a reactionary figure if viewed through the lens of historical materialism. He advocated a return to Zhou rule which, according to Marxist historians, was a slave society, whereas the Qin dynasty, which followed the Warring States period when Confucius lived, was more advanced as a feudal society.

An article by Dr Qian Mansu (钱满素) from the Chinese Academy of Social Sciences, listing four major negative aspects of Confucianism, serves as a good example of the orthodox, Marxist view. According to her, (1) Confucianism formed the basis for a patriarchal clan system which prevented personal development, (2) Confucianism promotes rule by men but not rule by law, (3) the Confucian ideal that anyone can become a sage is both unhelpful and unrealistic, and (4) the study of Confucianism was subordinate to politics, prevented technological development, and failed to encourage intellectual curiosity. Qian said Confucianism is simply an obstacle to China's development.¹⁰¹

This is the stand that Mao Zedong also adopted as the leader of the Chinese Communists. In 1940, in an essay titled "On New Democracy", he wrote:

We must transform China, which is ruled by the Old Culture and thus ignorant and backward, into such a China which is ruled by the New Culture and thus civilized and advanced. ... In China, we have an imperialist culture In China, we also have a half-feudal culture which reflects half-feudal politics and half-feudal economics; people who advocate respect for Confucius and reading the Classics, advocate the old Confucian propriety code and other old ideas, and oppose the new ideas of the New Culture, are all representatives of the half-feudal culture. ... [These two old cultures] must be overthrown. If we don't overthrow them, we

¹⁰⁰ "Lun renmin minzhu zhuanzheng", in Mao Zedong 1966, 1405–1406, 1408.

¹⁰¹ Quoted in Ling & Ma 2008, 265.

won't be able to establish any New Culture. ... The battle between the cultures is a battle of life and death.¹⁰²

In 1953, Mao attacked the venerable philosopher Liang Shuming (梁漱溟, 1893–1988) in an essay titled “Criticizing Liang Shuming’s Reactionary Thought”.¹⁰³ Mao’s attack was triggered by Liang’s criticism towards Mao’s agricultural policies.¹⁰⁴ In point 12 of the lengthy essay Mao stated:

As to the errors of Confucius, I see him as undemocratic and lacking the spirit of self-criticism, somewhat like Mr. Liang. [His ideas] have the air of evil hegemonism and the flavour of Fascism. I urge friends, in particular Mr Liang, not to study this set of ideas by Confucius. That would make me very happy.¹⁰⁵

During the chaotic ten-year period of 1966–1976, which started with the launch of the infamous Cultural Revolution and ended with Mao’s death, Confucianism came in for particularly fierce criticism. Confucianism was made the embodiment of all ‘feudalist rot’. However, it must be realized that the campaign to criticize Confucius and to “knock down the Confucian shop” was mostly motivated by the internal power struggle, and Confucius was just used as a scapegoat.

Similarly, history was instrumentalized for political purposes. The First Emperor of the Qin dynasty (221–207 BCE) was made a national hero as the ruler who first unified China, and Mao Zedong was presented as his only equal in history. This was also a direct jab at Confucianism, which was almost annihilated during the Qin dynasty. The Qin rulers favoured Legalism, *Fajia* (法家), known for its preference for rewards and especially punishments as the means to keep the people at bay, and its scorn for the ‘softy’ Confucians. Ironically, however, many of the ‘feudalist’ characteristics that

¹⁰² Mao Zedong 1967, 624, 655.

¹⁰³ Mao Zedong 1977, 107–115. Volume 5 of *Mao Zedong’s Selected Works* was published during the Cultural Revolution, whereas editions published before or thereafter only include volumes 1–4.

¹⁰⁴ Lodén 2006, 170–171.

¹⁰⁵ Mao Zedong 1977, 113.

Confucianism was criticized for were actually more Legalist in nature. In fact, imperial Confucianism was just “Legalism with a Confucian façade” as the rulers realized that rewards and punishments are actually quite effective.¹⁰⁶ This led to a kind of ossification of Confucianism, such as the Three Cardinal Leads and Five Constants (see Chapter III, “What is Confucianism?”) which were used as prime examples of feudal backwardness.

Amidst the Cultural Revolution campaigns, even the famous philosopher Feng Youlan (冯友兰, 1895–1990) had to write a self-criticism. In it, he confessed how his former defence of Confucianism had “served the big landlords, big bourgeoisie and Kuomintang reactionaries”. He wrote:

[The means] advocated by Confucius were in every case intended to benumb and deceive the working people more and more so that they would neither want nor dare to resist. ... [Confucius advocated] the all-round restoration of the old order of slave-society. ... I formerly interpreted Confucius’s ‘love for men’ to mean love for all men. ... [His] love, in fact, was only for a handful of slave-owning aristocrats. ... Confucius’s ideas were a reflection of [the] situation in the class struggle of that time. ... Educated by the Cultural Revolution, I have gained a somewhat better understanding of Confucius.¹⁰⁷

In contrast to Feng Youlan, Liang Shuming never admitted to any errors in his thinking. In 1974, he wrote: “In regard to the popular opinions presented in the cause of the current Criticize Confucius campaign, I don’t agree with most of them.”¹⁰⁸ “To hold to the current delusions—that ‘constraining oneself and keeping to propriety’¹⁰⁹ meant restoration of the Zhou dynasty or that the Zhou dynasty was a slave society or even that Confucius himself was a protector

¹⁰⁶ Hsiao 1977, 137.

¹⁰⁷ Feng Youlan 1974, 88, 92, 102–103, 105.

¹⁰⁸ Liang Shuming 2008, 164.

¹⁰⁹ ‘Constraining oneself and keeping to propriety’ is the phrase *ke ji fu li* (克己复礼) from the *Analects*, XII.1. During the Cultural Revolution, the latter part, ‘keeping to propriety’ (*fu li*), was read as ‘restoration of the old system’, something that Lin Biao (林彪, 1907–1971), who was criticized alongside Confucius, was accused of.

of slavery at the junction of a slave society and a feudal society—is to heap mistakes upon mistakes.”¹¹⁰ Liang urged his contemporaries to put things in their right historical perspective and not to resort to historical falsifications. He points out that the Three Cardinal Leads and Five Constants were not invented by Confucius. “Just as Marx cannot be blamed for the mistakes of all those students of Marxism who have sunk into the pitfall of Marxist dogmatism, how then could we blame Confucius for the feudal ethic code which was formed by the later generations?”¹¹¹ Though these words were not published at the time, one cannot but salute the intellectual integrity of Mr Liang.

Attitudes towards Confucianism began to change soon after the Cultural Revolution. This followed in the wake of the efforts to revive formal education, which had been sorely neglected for a decade. It was acknowledged that economic development relied upon a professional workforce and management as well as scientific research. The age-old maxim often associated with Confucianism, ‘respect teachers and value education’, was highlighted by the second paramount leader of the Chinese Communist Party, Deng Xiaoping (邓小平, 1904–1976), in a speech in August 1977.¹¹² Universities resumed normal recruitment that same year.

Deng Xiaoping launched the policies of reform and opening up in 1978. Two years later, he named Modest Welfare (*Xiaokang*, 小康) as the target of his reform policies. *Xiaokang* is the second stage in the traditional view of historical progress, the one preceding *Datong*. This signalled that while communism still remained the goal, it was put on hold for the foreseeable future, and China was to concentrate on economic growth. Modest Welfare has since remained the stated objective of the communist leadership.

A conference on social science theories in late 1978 concluded that the negative and positive aspects of Confucianism should be distinguished from each other.¹¹³ In essence, this meant adherence to Mao’s words from 1940: Communist Party members must “discard

¹¹⁰ Liang Shuming 2008, 170. From an essay entitled “Jintian women yingdang ruhe pingjia Kongzi”.

¹¹¹ *Ibid.*, 171.

¹¹² “Zun shi zhong jiao”, at <http://www.moe.edu.cn/edoas/website18/63/info1226904015050763.htm>. Accessed 22 Apr 2010.

¹¹³ Ai 2008, 57–58.

the feudalistic dross and keep the democratic essence” of ancient culture.¹¹⁴

In the 1980s, further conferences on Confucianism were held. The Confucian emphasis on social harmony was well suited to downplay the importance of the class struggle, which had gone to extremes during the Cultural Revolution and was no longer wanted in the era of economic reform. The government even funded an academic project on New Confucianism (see Chapter III, “The emergence of New Confucianism”) which was undoubtedly aimed at strengthening the position of ‘socialist Confucianism’, that is, Confucianism which is compatible with the correct political doctrine.

A representative example of opening the way for ‘socialist Confucianism’ is an article discussing what Confucianism has to offer for the Socialist Market Economy in China, by Professor Luo Guojie (罗国杰) from Renmin University (see also Chapter III, “What is Confucianism?”). Luo opines that while a market economy means increased competition, the Chinese should aim for “fair competition” and steer clear of the selfish profit-seeking of the ‘petty men’. Following propriety and justice, as advocated by Confucius, means collectivism. Luo condemns individualism as the major threat to socialism during this era of reform and opening up. China must stick to Marxism, follow the path leading to the good of the many instead of the few, and be extremely cautious of the corrupting influence of Western ideologies and values. In the proper fashion, Luo concludes that one must put traditional Chinese culture under careful scrutiny in order to be able “to discard the dross and select the essence” which is useful in the present world.¹¹⁵

Luo appears to have glossed over matters in regard to earlier communist views on Confucianism’s conservatism. While he admits that Confucianism in its time supported the cause of the slave-owning class, his message is that the correct elements of Confucianism outweigh its incorrect elements. It is also noteworthy that he places unity at the core of Confucian tradition.

¹¹⁴ Mao Zedong 1967, 668. From the essay “Xin minzhuzhuyi”.

¹¹⁵ Luo Guojie 1999, 444.

The project for replacing Confucianism with Traditional Learning

Confucianism and other Chinese traditional schools of thought got another boost from the patriotic education campaign, launched in 1991 in the aftermath of the Tian'anmen events in 1989. According to Wang Zheng's study, "a patriotic narrative replaced the old class-struggle narrative" in the new school textbooks, produced during the campaign. In addition, the textbooks presented "a new 'victimization narrative', which blames the 'West' for China's suffering." 'Rejuvenating China' was a popular political slogan.¹¹⁶ The idea of Chinese traditional learning, presented at least as equivalent to the Western philosophical and scientific tradition, fitted this patriotic narrative well.

The third generation leader Jiang Zemin (江泽民, b. 1926) said in a speech in 1991: "With regard to the rich cultural legacies left over from China's history of several thousand years, we should select the essence and discard the dross therefrom, and carry forward and develop them in line with the spirit of the times in order to make the past serve the present."¹¹⁷ This statement was related to the fight against 'bourgeois liberalization' by the neo-conservative wing of the Chinese Communist Party, led by Jiang. In 1986, the Party had started promoting the building of a 'Socialist Spiritual Civilization'. It was an effort to steer the Chinese people away from worshipping the Western values which had started seeping into the country, partly introduced through the think-tanks¹¹⁸ of Hu Yaobang and Zhao Ziyang, which influenced the liberalist movements in the late 1980s, including the Tian'anmen demonstrations.

In 1994, traditional culture was placed in a central position in the Patriotic Education campaign. In 1995, the Central Party School and the China Confucius Foundation (established in 1984 by the central government to promote research on Confucianism in order to advance Socialist Spiritual Civilization) organized an academic symposium on

¹¹⁶ Wang 2008, 784, 794.

¹¹⁷ The complete transcript of Jiang's speech in English, *Xinhua*wang, at <http://news.xinhuanet.com/english/20010726/433649.htm>. Accessed 29 Apr 2010.

¹¹⁸ Li 2009.

Marxism and Confucianism. As was to be expected, the symposium exposed the prevailing distrust towards the ‘feudalist character’ of Confucianism, though some argued that in order to survive, Marxism must be sinicized, and in order for this to happen, it must absorb elements of China’s traditional culture.¹¹⁹ Although China’s national media reported in 1993 on the emergence of a ‘traditional learning fever’, interest in traditional learning was more of a fabrication than a real, nation-wide fad at that time.¹²⁰

The 1990s also saw the emergence of ‘Asian values’. The latter can be seen as a counter-reaction to the prevalence of the views of Max Weber (1864–1920), who attributed China’s failure to develop capitalism to the Confucian mentality which, according to his analysis, favoured the *status quo* and preferred adjusting to the world rather than attempting to change it. In the views of Singaporean leaders Lee Kuan Yew (李光耀) and Goh Chok Tong (吴作栋), Confucian virtues such as respect for education, loyalty to both the extended family and the state, preference for social harmony, and collectivism, had formed the spiritual basis for the rise of the ‘East Asian Tigers’, South Korea, Singapore, Taiwan and Hong Kong.¹²¹ Later, other Asian leaders, such as Mahathir bin Mohamad of Malaysia, Suharto of Indonesia and Jiang Zemin of China, also expressed their support for countering the Western emphasis on human rights and democracy with Asian values centring instead on the right of development.¹²²

Not altogether groundlessly, the Chinese government’s interest towards tradition and ‘Asian values’ was criticized by Taiwanese Confucians as a ‘United Front gimmick’¹²³, that is, as an attempt to elicit the sympathies of overseas Chinese and Taiwanese through Confucian rhetoric. The Taiwanese must have looked askance at

¹¹⁹ Makeham 2008, 65–66, 239–241. The new emphasis on traditional learning also provoked criticism from those who feared that it would deviate China from its course of modernization (Ai 2008, 63).

¹²⁰ Ibid., 68, 70 fn. 35.

¹²¹ See Ai 2008, 44–45.

¹²² See Kraft 2001.

¹²³ Ai 2008, 51. See Makeham 2008, 197. ‘United Front’ refers to the periods of cooperation between the Communist Party and the National Party before and during the Chinese Civil War. In 1981, the Communists made a plea to the Nationalists in Taiwan to form a new united front for the reunification of China.

communist China joining hands with the South East Asian countries by playing the Confucian card, which had previously been Taiwan's trump.

Following the worldwide collapse of the communist ideology, and in the wake of the Chinese Communist Party's positive attitude towards classical schools of thought, even liberal and anti-Marxist views of Confucianism began to emerge. Some liberal thinkers went as far as to say that Marxism was not compatible with modernization and should therefore be replaced by Confucianism. Some scholars sought to use Confucian concepts to fill the spiritual void, which they claimed was a result of the opportunism and nihilism of the Cultural Revolution, or even the anti-traditionalism of the May 4th Movement.¹²⁴

This highlighted the need for the Communist Party to distance itself from Confucianism again. After all, the Communist Party sees its foundation as resting on the legacy of the May 4th Movement, which is conventionally perceived as anti-Confucian. Consequently, a new appraisal of the relationship between communism and tradition began to gain prevalence. Professor Yan Jiayan (严家炎) from Peking University opined that while the Cultural Revolution had resulted in an ideological crisis and smashed tradition, the same wasn't true for the May 4th Movement. While the latter had attacked the Three Cardinal Leads, this did not constitute an overall negation of Confucianism. Yan pointed out that imperial Confucianism also had unorthodox branches. He furthermore emphasized that China's traditional culture was more than just Confucianism.¹²⁵

As a consequence, the government started promoting Traditional Learning, *Guoxue*, following the idea of Zhang Binglin, mentioned above. In 2004, at the fourth plenum of the Sixteenth Central Committee of the Communist Party of China, it was affirmed that "China's advanced socialist culture" needs to be constructed on the basis of 5,000 years of traditional culture.¹²⁶

What is Traditional Learning then? Historian Mao Peiqi (毛佩琦) from Renmin University expresses it this way:

¹²⁴ See Song Xianlin 2003, 91, 94. Ai 2008, 41, 52.

¹²⁵ Quoted in Ling & Ma 2008, 272.

¹²⁶ Makeham 2008, 318.

Put simply, it is the learning that makes the Chinese Chinese. ... Put more elaborately, the objects of the study of traditional learning not only include literature but also substantial things; they not only include material artefacts but also immaterial cultural heritage; they include, among others, buildings, clothing, food, music, paintings, medicine and the theatre of all our nationalities. ... China's traditional learning has never rejected the intake of foreign elements: when Buddhism was introduced into China, it went through changes and became uniquely Chinese Buddhism Therefore, the studying and revitalising of traditional learning today does not mean retreating into antiquity or ossification. ... Nevertheless, China's traditional learning is clearly different from Western learning. China's traditional learning is our counterpart of Western learning and both represent totally different scientific systems.¹²⁷

What is the use of Traditional Learning? According to Mao Peiqi, the continuity of China's culture was broken in the revolutionary era. After the establishment of New China, "at the time when total westernization was the target of all-round critique, China actually moved towards total westernization. Only after the reform and opening up period had lasted for 30 years did the prospering Chinese awake, and the protection and revitalization of traditional learning become part of the national consciousness."¹²⁸ He continues:

As a strong, independent nation among nations, China must have a correspondingly strong and independent national culture. ... China does not need to absorb the wisdom of her traditional culture only in order to fulfil the needs of her own reconstruction and development, but China also faces an opportunity and the responsibility to contribute her wisdom for the benefit of the whole of humanity.¹²⁹

However, even if the Communist Party is reluctant to officially endorse Confucianism, it has not been possible to keep Confucius away from

¹²⁷ Mao Peiqi's "Foreword" in *Shisan Jing jie du* (2008). Cf. Zhang Dainian, quoted in Makeham 2008, 67.

¹²⁸ Mao Peiqi's "Foreword" in *Shisan Jing jie du* (2008).

¹²⁹ Ibid.

Traditional Learning. In practice many, if not most, of the concrete manifestations of Traditional Learning are related to Confucianism. As Liang Qichao (梁启超, 1873–1929) wrote: “Confucian philosophy does not equate with the whole of Chinese culture, but if you take Confucianism away, I am afraid not much else will remain.”¹³⁰

Three traditional festivals—*Qingming* (Tomb Sweeping Day), *Duanwu* (the Dragon Boat Festival) and *Zhongqiu* (the Moon Festival)—were made official holidays in 2007.¹³¹ Although these festivals are not Confucian in origin, the folklore attached to them has a strong Confucian flavour. For instance, both *Qingming* and *Duanwu* are related to the remembrance of certain righteous and virtuous scholar-officials who lived during the Eastern Zhou period (770–256 BCE). Confucius’s birthday is once again observed with lavish ceremonies every September.¹³²

Institutes of Traditional Learning have been established in universities, and Confucianism has a central position on their curricula. A statue of Confucius was erected to mark the establishment of the School of Chinese Classics at Renmin University in 2005. The Research Centre for China’s Traditional Culture at Renmin University convened an editorial meeting in 2004 for the book series “Recitation Texts to Be Used in Promoting Confucianism to the Masses”. In the same year, a series of primary school textbooks on Confucianism were published under the endorsement of China’s Ministry of Education. The academic year in many schools begins with a quasi-Confucian ceremony where the students wear ancient-style robes and headgear (often to the dislike of *hanfu* purists). Weekend classes in Confucianism for school children and even pre-school children have become popular.¹³³ One may also note that Article 21 in China’s

¹³⁰ Quoted in *Shisan Jing jie du* (2008), “Editors’ Foreword”.

¹³¹ “Chinese mark 1st ‘official’ Qingming with visits to deceased”, by Xinhua, Beijing, in *China Daily Online*, 4 Apr 2008, at http://www.chinadaily.com.cn/china/2008-04/04/content_6592879.htm. Accessed 16 Sep 2009.

¹³² Confucius’s birthday was celebrated on the Mainland for the first time in 1989 (Ai 2008, 31). Prior to that, only the anniversary of Confucius’s death was observed on October 1st (also the national day of the PRC). Traditionally (and all along in Taiwan), the birthday is observed by Confucians.

¹³³ Ai 2008, 55. Makeham 2008, 318–319, 322. Ho 2009. “China’s thriving Confucian schools,” by Jill McGivering, *BBC News*, 3 Jan 2008, at <http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/asia-pacific/7169814.stm>. Accessed 28 Sep 2009. See also Li Xiangping & Shi Dajian 2009, 74.

Marriage Law, which stipulates that adult children have the duty to support their elderly parents, is inherently Confucian.

Confucius is also the spearhead of the Ministry of Education-led drive to introduce Chinese culture to the world. Modelled after the Goethe-Institut, Alliance Française and other such institutions, there are to date some 300 Confucius Institutes in various parts of the world. Approximately one third of these are in European countries, including one in Finland at the University of Helsinki.¹³⁴ The goal is set at 500 institutes.¹³⁵

It would be tempting to hypothesize that the establishment of the Confucius Institutes is a conscious effort to bolster China's peaceful rise, but the fact remains that the Ministry of Education ranks relatively low in the Chinese organizational hierarchy, and it is therefore improbable that it should have been entrusted with a major role in Chinese foreign policy implementation. Besides, the Confucius Institutes are under Chinese control to varying degrees. Some, like the Confucius Institute in Stockholm, are tightly overseen by their home institutions, which leaves little room for potential Chinese propaganda purposes.¹³⁶ The phenomenon of the spread of the Confucius Institutes is nevertheless worth keeping a close eye on.

A Harmonious Society

In the wake of the side effects of the otherwise successful economic policies, especially the growing inequality, the Communist Party had to acknowledge that “social equity and justice is a basic condition of social harmony”.¹³⁷ In order to create a new moral focus which would balance the brutal competition over economic growth, the fourth

¹³⁴ Exact numbers as of October 2009 are available on the website of the Office of Chinese Language Council International, or *Hanban* for short (<http://english.hanban.edu.cn/kzxy.php>, accessed 29 Apr 2010).

¹³⁵ Li Xiangping & Shi Dajian 2009, 74.

¹³⁶ In 2007, a member of the Swedish Parliament expressed concern that the Confucius Institute in Stockholm would provide a bridgehead for Chinese government propaganda and even espionage (<http://www.riksdagen.se/Webbnav/index.aspx?nid=101&bet=2007/08:46>, accessed 29 Apr 2010).

¹³⁷ Ai 2008, 32. Bell 2008, 9. Shambaugh 2008, 115.

generation leader Hu Jintao (胡锦涛, b. 1942) initiated the concept of a ‘Socialist Harmonious Society’ in 2005. Whereas the concrete content in building the harmonious society must come through social and economic policies, conceptually harmony is central to Chinese traditional thought in general, and to Confucianism in particular. However, in the official Party documents discussing the Socialist Harmonious Society, Confucianism is not mentioned, although Hu Jintao himself has made references to Confucius in his speeches.¹³⁸

At the 17th Party Congress, the word ‘harmonious’ was added to the CCP Constitution.¹³⁹ Hu Jintao had this to say about the Socialist Harmonious Society:

Building a harmonious socialist society is a historical mission throughout the cause of socialism with Chinese characteristics.... It is through development that we will increase the material wealth of society and constantly improve people’s lives, and it is again through development that we will guarantee social equity and justice and constantly promote social harmony. ... In accordance with the general requirements for democracy and the rule of law, equity and justice, honesty and fraternity, vigor and vitality, stability and order, and harmony between man and nature and the principle of all the people building and sharing a harmonious socialist society, we will spare no effort to solve the most specific problems of the utmost and immediate concern to the people and strive to create a situation in which all people do their best, find their proper places in society and live together in harmony, so as to provide a favorable social environment for development.¹⁴⁰

Modest Welfare has also been given concrete criteria in terms of national income. Both the timetable and the criteria have been modified several times. Reaffirming Deng Xiaoping’s goal-setting from 1980, Hu stated that the society should enter the *Xiaokang* level

¹³⁸ See Bell 2008, 9.

¹³⁹ The amended text is available e.g. at <http://www.china.org.cn/english/congress/229722.htm>. Accessed 19 Aug 2010.

¹⁴⁰ Complete text of Hu’s report at the 17th Party Congress in English at http://news.xinhuanet.com/english/2007-10/24/content_6938749_2.htm. Accessed 26 Apr 2010.

of overall welfare (“moderately prosperous society” in the official translation) by 2020.¹⁴¹ Furthermore, Hu outlined the meaning of Modest Welfare in this way:

When the goal of building a moderately prosperous society in all respects is attained by 2020, China, a large developing socialist country with an ancient civilization, will have basically accomplished industrialization, with its overall strength significantly increased and its domestic market ranking as one of the largest in the world. It will be a country whose people are better off and enjoy markedly improved quality of life and a good environment. Its citizens will have more extensive democratic rights, show higher ethical standards and look forward to greater cultural achievements. China will have better institutions in all areas and Chinese society will have greater vitality coupled with stability and unity.¹⁴²

Hu Jintao also emphasized the need to “promote Chinese culture and build a common spiritual home for the Chinese nation”.

Chinese culture has been an unfailing driving force for the Chinese nation to keep its unity and make progress from generation to generation. We must have a comprehensive understanding of traditional Chinese culture, keep its essence and discard its dross to enable it to fit in with present-day society, stay in harmony with modern civilization, keep its national character and reflect changes of the times. ... The great rejuvenation of the Chinese nation will definitely be accompanied by the thriving of Chinese culture.¹⁴³

¹⁴¹ Speech at the 17th Party Congress at http://news.xinhuanet.com/newscenter/2007-10/24/content_6938568_3.htm. Accessed 26 Apr 2010.

¹⁴² Complete text of Hu’s report at the 17th Party Congress in English at http://news.xinhuanet.com/english/2007-10/24/content_6938749_3.htm. Accessed 26 Apr 2010.

¹⁴³ Speech at the 17th Party Congress at http://news.xinhuanet.com/english/2007-10/24/content_6938749_6.htm. Accessed 26 Apr 2010.

The concept of harmony, *he* (和) or *hexie* (和谐), has its roots in Confucianism.¹⁴⁴ Fan Zhongyan's (范仲淹, 989–1052) famous essay "Inscription at Yueyang Tower" contains the phrase: *zheng tong ren he* (政通人和), "the state was administered smoothly and the people lived in harmony with each other". 'Harmony' is often defined through this quote by Confucius: "The gentleman acts in harmony with others but is no conformist. The petty man is conformist but does not act in harmony with others."¹⁴⁵ Senior editor of the *People's Daily*, Lin Zhibo, explained the meaning of this Confucian maxim for the realization of the Socialist Harmonious Society in this way:

'Harmony' is harmonious and unified, 'conformity' is similar and unanimous; 'harmony' is abstract and internal, 'conformity' is concrete and external. ... 'To act in harmony but not to be conformist' is the only way to common prosperity and development in the multi-cultural world. ... 'Not to be conformist' means that one does not strive for similarity nor aim to duplicate what others have done. As long as one's big goals are not in conflict with those of the others, one should recognize the differences, tolerate the differences and even respect the differences. In this way, the contradictions may be dissolved and all can coexist and prosper together. ... It is only through integration¹⁴⁶ that we may smoothly take the step from economic globalization to a culturally pluralist unity ... and finally reach the realm of Great Community

¹⁴⁴ The character *he* (和) was recently chosen "the most 'Chinese' Chinese character" by the monthly *Zhonghua yichan* ("'Harmony' voted No. 1 character" by Liu Chang, *Global Times*, 18 Oct 2010, at <http://china.globaltimes.cn/society/2010-10/582905.html>, accessed 19 Oct. 2010).

¹⁴⁵ *Analects* XIII.23. In this quotation, the character used for 'harmony' is actually 合 (a synonym and in modern Chinese also a character similar in sound to 和). The first sentence of this quotation is displayed in the short film *Hexie Zhongguo* ("Harmonious China"), which was shown to visitors at the China Pavilion in the Shanghai Expo 2010, together with "(although) I follow my heart's desires I shall not cross the bounds (of propriety)" from *Analects* II.4.

¹⁴⁶ The somewhat unusual expression that Lin Zhibo uses for 'integration', *mohe* (磨合), refers literally to grinding off sharp edges in order to make people concordant.

in the world. Such Great Community would mean internal harmony and unity but not external similarity and unanimity¹⁴⁷

Today, the differences between Asian values, traditional studies, Confucianism and socialist harmony are being purposefully blurred, which is in accordance with both the interests of the Party, not wanting to see an overemphasis on Confucianism, and of the people, for whom the traditional culture is a living and ever-changing organism and who have no need to differentiate between Confucianism and other elements of Chinese culture.¹⁴⁸

Workers Daily published a commentary in 2006 which discussed the image of Traditional Learning among the population. According to the commentary, people understand Traditional Learning to mean the Confucian classics, classical poetry and arts as well as traditional customs. The commentary saw this as a narrow view but expressed hope that the values that people identify with Traditional Learning could strengthen a common identity and the cohesion of the nation. According to the commentary, these values include fraternal love, collectiveness, harmony without conformity, the oneness of humanity, patriotism, people forming the basis of the state, consideration for others, perseverance and diligence, thriftiness in running a household, and respect for education. The author, politics editor Liu Wenning (刘文宁), warns against absorbing influences which are incompatible with modernization, especially in terms of education.¹⁴⁹

A similar sentiment is shared in a commentary published recently in the *People's Daily*. The author, writer and columnist Wang Meng (王蒙), criticizes the craze for reintroducing classical primers to school children. "It is all right and necessary that Chinese children today are taught to obey rules, talk politely, respect their teachers and venerate the leaders", the author writes, but notes that such traditional values must be subject to the principles of modern society, such as equality before the law, and must not hinder creativity, imagination and

¹⁴⁷ "Junzi he er bu tong' de jiedu", *Renmin luntan*, vol. 4, 2005, at www.people.com.cn/GB/paper85/14577/1295896.html. Accessed 27 Apr 2010.

¹⁴⁸ See Allen 1999.

¹⁴⁹ "Pinglun: You guan 'guoxuere' de ruogan sikao", by Liu Wenning, *Xinhua*, at news.xinhuanet.com/politics/2006-08/17/content_4971071.htm. Accessed 27 Apr 2010.

readiness to debate. Children must also be encouraged to engage in physical activities and play, things neglected in the classical primers.¹⁵⁰

Outside China, the end of the Asian economic miracle has recently embarrassed the advocates of Asian values.¹⁵¹ Even Lee Kuan Yew has said that respect for elders does perhaps not meet the demands of modernity and that loyalty to family has often led to family cronyism.¹⁵²

Inside China, the discourse on Asian values is still very much alive. Vice-Minister in the Ministry of Foreign Affairs, He Yafei (何亚非), claimed recently that in the minds of many Chinese, the Asian values, or Confucian thought, are just as important as universal human rights standards. He said in an interview that while China recognizes the universality of human rights, it also acknowledges that different societies may employ different methods in promoting and protecting human rights due to their different cultural, societal and historical backgrounds. Therefore, human rights and Asian values or Confucianism are not dialectically opposite but mutually complementary value systems, concluded He.¹⁵³

A case in point: The Zhonghua Culture Symbolic City

Traditional studies are self-evidently meant to promote a positive image of China to the Chinese ‘diaspora’ (the overseas Chinese of both recent and earlier eras), as well as the Taiwanese and the world at large. It is not misleading to talk of ‘United Front Gimmicks’. The meaning of these efforts for the ‘peaceful rise of China’ and ‘China’s soft power’ will be a phenomenon to follow closely. Here I introduce two examples of such ‘gimmicks’.

The first example has been discussed in some detail by James Leibold in *The China Journal*, namely the Humanistic Olympic Studies

¹⁵⁰ “Cong redu ‘Dizi gui’ shuqi”, by Wang Meng, *Renmin ribao (Haiwaiban)*, 12 Jan 2010, p. 1.

¹⁵¹ Ai 2008, 46–47.

¹⁵² *Newsweek* interview in 2001, at <http://www.singapore-window.org/sw01/010128nw.htm>. Accessed 28 Apr 2010.

¹⁵³ “He Yafei: Rujia sixiang gen renquan biao zhun tongdeng zhongyao,” by Xinhua, 19 March 2010, at <http://news.sina.com.cn/c/2010-03-19/024017238601s.shtml>. Accessed 28 Apr 2010.

Center which was established in Beijing ahead of the Beijing Olympics in 2008. According to Leibold, the concept of “Humanistic Olympics” was “originally intended as a foil for Western critics of China’s human rights record.” The Humanistic Olympic Studies Center was established in order to flesh out the concept with Confucian meaning, so the “Great Community (*Datong*) of the world” and “harmony between man and nature” (*Tian ren heyi*, 天人合一) were linked with the Olympian ideals by the scholars participating in the project. The same thought was put in concrete form in the opening ceremony of the Olympics where the world was given “an exquisite cultural banquet” of the “profound poetry” of Chinese culture, adapted to suit foreign palates.¹⁵⁴

An even more concrete example is the “*Zhonghua* Culture Symbolic City” (*Zhonghua wenhua biao zhi cheng*, 中华文化标志城) project which aims to build an entire city to symbolize China’s cultural heritage. The project was conceived as early as 1995, when President Jiang Zemin issued an eight-point proposal for the development of the relations between the two sides of the Taiwan Strait. The sixth point states that the 5,000-year-old culture forms a spiritual link which binds all the sons and daughters of all the ethnic groups of the *Zhonghua* nation together.

Jiang Zemin elaborated the theme in 1997 in a speech at Harvard University where he said that culture also advances the cause of China’s reunification. In 1998, the “*Huaxia* Cultural Links Project” (*Huaxia wenhua niudai gongcheng*, 华夏文化纽带工程) was launched jointly by the Taiwan Affairs Office under the State Council and other bodies dealing with propaganda work and overseas Chinese relations. In 2004, Jiang’s successor, Hu Jintao, emphasized the great historical significance of the project, alluding to the historical task of China’s reunification.¹⁵⁵

The “*Huaxia* Cultural Links Project” has promoted different activities, such as the launching of campaigns promoting classical literature and philosophy. The most ambitious endeavour which the Project has conceived is the building of the “*Zhonghua* Culture

¹⁵⁴ Leibold 2010a , 20–23

¹⁵⁵ Information on the *Zhonghua* Culture Symbolic City website at www.ccsc.gov.cn. Accessed 15 Jan 2010.

Symbolic City”. President Hu Jintao and the Ministry of Culture gave the idea their blessing in 2001.¹⁵⁶

The “*Zhonghua* Culture Symbolic City” is to be built in Jining City in Shandong Province. The city is set to span over 300 square kilometres, combining the ancient home of Confucius in Qufu and the ancient home of Mencius in Zoucheng into one tourism site, complete with a range of new buildings. The stated cost of the project is 30 billion renminbi yuan (EUR 3 billion). According to some proponents of the project, the cultural sites of the new city would provide the venue for all national commemorative events in the future. It is to become China’s “Holy Land” or at least China’s “Cultural Capital”. The plans include erecting a 168-metre-high statue of Confucius.¹⁵⁷

The construction supposedly got underway in 2010. According to the plans, first to be built are a new Confucius Museum and a youth centre which will form part of a Confucian academy. Part of a World Bank loan granted to China for the protection of cultural heritage during 2010–12 is targeted for the project, and a World Bank appraisal team visited the site in early 2010.¹⁵⁸

Naturally, the strongest lobbyists for the project come from the region. For any province, a project of this magnitude is most welcome. However, the plans have also evoked strong opposition. The project is seen by many as obscenely expensive and megalomaniac. Many critics claim that the cost will exceed the estimated 30 billion yuan manifold, while even that amount of money would be enough to build 60,000 new village schools. It is also feared that the new buildings and roads will destroy the old cultural landscape. The project is said to disregard nationalities other than the Han and schools of thought other than Confucianism. In addition, it is accused of overlooking the

¹⁵⁶ Ibid.

¹⁵⁷ “Zhuanjia cheng Jining jiang chengwei woguo wenhua fudu,” *Diyi Caijing Ribao* through *Sina.com* news, 3 March 2008, at <http://news.sina.com.cn/c/2008-03-03/045615061062.shtml>. Accessed 15 Jan 2010. Blog post by Tao Dongfeng (陶东风) on 19 March 2008, at <http://blog.sina.com.cn/taodongfeng>. Accessed 15 Jan 2010. The chosen height represents low-brow numerology as ‘168’ is pronounced somewhat similarly to ‘may your way be prosperous’.

¹⁵⁸ Information on the *Zhonghua* Culture Symbolic City website, www.ccsc.gov.cn. Accessed 25 Feb 2010. List of the projects at <http://www.qddpc.gov.cn/uploadfile/200997101619497.pdf>. Accessed 18 Aug 2010.

achievements of New China. Some have even contemptuously dubbed the project an attempt to create a “Chinese Jerusalem”.¹⁵⁹

It is true that the word *Huaxia* in the name of the framework project is problematic. The word refers specifically to the forefathers of the Han Chinese who inhabited the central, ‘cultured’ states during the pre-imperial era. There is perhaps reason to believe that the “*Zhonghua* Culture Symbolic City” is being used to promote Han nationalism. One of the chief advisors on the project is Professor Ge Jianxiong, an avid commentator on contemporary affairs.¹⁶⁰ His involvement in the highly political, government-supported project is at first sight surprising. The general ethos of Ge’s book *Tongyi yu fenlie* (discussed in Chapter I) underrates unity as the main tradition in Chinese history and thus goes very much against the official view.

In his role as advisor on the “*Zhonghua* Culture Symbolic City” project, Ge has said:

Chinese culture must be considered to include the cultures of all nationalities living in China. Chinese culture is pluralistic and not just the culture of the Han nationality (the *Huaxia* culture). Even if we were to regard it only as the culture of the Han nation, it is not based solely on Confucianism or the school of Confucius and Mencius. ... Jining City (composed of Qufu and Zoucheng) has certain advantages, being situated in the cradle of traditional culture ... but it is not the only such place.¹⁶¹

Ge explained that he is not seeking the creation of a “holy site” (for the *Huaxia* nation or Confucianism), but a “cultural secondary capital” which would ease the burden of Beijing by becoming the venue for certain national festivities. First and foremost, “the entire project must be undertaken in a way which is in accordance with

¹⁵⁹ Blog post by Tao Dongfeng (陶东风) on 19 March 2008, at <http://blog.sina.com.cn/taodongfeng>. Accessed 15 Jan 2010. *Xin shiji zhoukan* through *Baidu kongjian*, 21 March 2008, at <http://hi.baidu.com/56cun/blog/item/53a179c4769a97ad8326acfa.html>. Accessed 15 Jan 2010.

¹⁶⁰ “Ge Jianxiong tan Zhonghua wenhua biaozi cheng jianshe wenti,” *Xinjingbao* through *Sina.com* news, 12 March 2008, at <http://news.sina.com.cn/c/2008-03-12/021515126572.shtml>. Accessed 15 Jan 2010.

¹⁶¹ *Ibid.*

the Constitution and other laws, and which protects the unity of the state, the union of the nationalities, territorial integrity and societal harmony.”¹⁶²

What does Ge Jianxiong mean by all this? One clue can be found in an interview he gave to the *New York Times* in 2004. Referring to the omissions and alterations in Chinese history books used in high schools he said: “In China, history is still used as a political tool, and at the high school level, we still must follow the doctrine.”¹⁶³ So I wonder if Ge is just paying lip service to the official view on China’s unity, while he really believes that history will repeat itself and China will once again become divided. Besides, it would be easy to believe that Ge would see such a division as benefiting the Chinese people, considering the way he extols the virtues of non-centralized rule in his book. I also wonder if Ge isn’t just paying lip service to the “union of nationalities”, while he is really advocating the creation of the “cultural capital” as a way to bolster the cultural identity of the descendants of the *Huaxia*, the Han Chinese. Such an identity would be needed, were China to become divided again.

Saving the Nation with political religion

Judging by the combination of “building a Socialist Harmonious Society” and the promotion of Traditional Learning, it seems that the Party-state wishes to reinvent Chinese tradition as ‘harmony’. On the basis of the internal situation in China and the legitimization needs of the Party, it also seems likely that ‘harmony’ is used as a euphemism for ‘stability’ and ‘unity’. In the light of contemporary Chinese history, this would represent a link in a long, unbroken continuum.

The history of twentieth-century China has been described as a duel between National Salvation and Enlightenment (*qimeng*, 启蒙). National Salvation is often accused of having suppressed the enlightenment of the societal sphere in China. During the republican

¹⁶² Ibid.

¹⁶³ “China’s Textbooks Twist and Omit History”, by Howard W. French, *New York Times*, 6 December 2004, at <http://www.nytimes.com/2004/12/06/international/asia/06textbook.html?pagewanted=print&position=>. Accessed 15 Feb 2010.

revolution in the early 20th century, slogans promoting science led to the development of a scientific world view, whereas slogans for democracy were transformed into ‘democratic centralism’ (i.e. one-party rule) by the Mao Zedong-led communists, maintains Li Zehou (李泽厚), a prominent, critical-Marxist philosopher. He particularly blames the militarization within the Communist Party during the war in the 1930s and 40s.¹⁶⁴

Saving the Nation is invariably presented as modernization: shedding the old shackles that kept economic, scientific and military development at bay. Although China is often presented as the longest surviving culture in the world, it can also be argued that the cultural continuum has been completely and irrevocably severed by the revolutions of the 20th century: the republican revolution, the communist revolution, and the so-called Cultural Revolution. According to the latter view, tradition (especially in the form of Confucianism) has no place other than in the museums of intellectual history.

Joseph R. Levenson wrote in 1965: “By making their own museum-like approach to traditional Chinese culture, the Chinese kept their continuity without precluding change.”¹⁶⁵ Some twelve years later, Thomas A. Metzger argued instead that Chinese thinkers today are still captives of their cultural traditions, shaped by Confucianism, but with an optimistic outlook. The predicament of the Confucians in the imperial era was related to the difficulty of transforming one’s inner moral nature (becoming a ‘sage’) into external instrumentalities, but Marxism at least partially solved the problem, “especially through [Mao’s] equation of practical, selfless work devoted to ‘the people’ and the inner dignity of the individual.”¹⁶⁶

In the view of Li Zehou, the traditional calling of the Chinese intelligentsia was no different from that of those religious believers who wish to “save man from floods and flames”.¹⁶⁷ The goal of the Confucians has always been equally the salvation of the soul and the salvation of society, or to use the traditional Confucian concepts, ‘Inner Sageliness’ (*neisheng*, 内圣) and ‘Outer Kingliness’ (*waiwang*, 外王).

¹⁶⁴ Li Zehou 1994, 157–158.

¹⁶⁵ Levenson 1965, vol. III, 124.

¹⁶⁶ Metzger 1977, 233.

¹⁶⁷ Li Zehou 1994, 154. The quotation is from *Mencius*, “Teng Wen Gong II”.

This means that a Confucian is supposed to first become sage-like in knowledge, wisdom and morals through self-cultivation, and then turn that enlightened state into enlightened action for the betterment of society like a sage king of yore. Looking at many of those who today identify themselves as followers of Confucianism (see next chapter) it becomes evident that their predicament is still the same as during the imperial era, but at least the tradition is living outside museums.

Calling Confucius a “prophet” and using concepts such as “holy site” in connection with Confucianism is liable to make Confucianism seem like a religion. In China, there was an attempt to make Confucianism a religion during the early republican era. Kang Youwei published a petition to specify in the constitution that Confucianism is the “natural religion” of China. Zhang Binglin was annoyed by these attempts and reminded people that Confucius was never the object of lavish worship and was honoured only as a progenitor of their profession by students and scholars.¹⁶⁸

It is indeed possible to classify Confucianism as a religion because there are so many different definitions of religion. According to some scholars, Confucianism is a religion because it “offers a total, or holistic, perspective on the human condition” and a philosophy of life with eternal, even divine, precepts.¹⁶⁹ It is similarly debatable whether Confucianism is a philosophy; the answer depends on the definition of philosophy.

The main argument against the classification of Confucianism as a religion is the lack of belief in a personal god as well as strict doctrines or rituals.¹⁷⁰ There is also no Confucian concept of an afterlife. Besides, the presentation of Confucianism as a religion or even as an ideology is probably a late, and ultimately Western, invention. Professor Lionel M. Jensen from the University of Colorado at Denver claims that it was the Jesuit missionaries who, in the late 16th century, “recast” Confucianism as a religion with Confucius as the Christ-like central figure. According to Jensen, before the Jesuits there was no such

¹⁶⁸ Shimada 1990, 124, 125–126, 166 (fn. 55). Li Ling 2007, 383. According to the petitioners, Mongolia and Tibet could keep their freedom to practise Buddhism. In regard to other parts of the country, Kang Youwei was probably advocating the destruction of Buddhist monasteries and Taoist temples to some extent. (Shimada 1990, 167, fns. 61 and 63.) Cf. fn. 299.

¹⁶⁹ Lodén 2006, 3–4.

¹⁷⁰ See e.g. Li Zehou 1994, 153.

thing as ‘Confucianism’ but instead, only the ethical and spiritual traditions of the scholarly class claiming to carry on the teachings of Confucius.¹⁷¹

It needs to be pointed out here that in view of the anachronistic character of the term Confucianism, discussed above, it is becoming customary to use the Chinese term *Ru* even in English-language texts when referring to Confucians and their school of thought. Originally, *Ru* (儒) referred to experts of rites and propriety, and came to be used as the word referring to the followers of the teachings of Confucius probably only after the death of the man himself.¹⁷² In this paper, however, I have chosen to use the conventional ‘Confucianism’, even when translating the term *Ru* from the Chinese.

As will be discussed in Chapter III, there are those in China today who are again calling for the establishment of Confucianism as a religion and making it the leading moral guideline—a national religion—of China. There are also other efforts in China today, both within and without the government, to consciously fill the spiritual vacuum, caused by the lack of ideological content in China’s current form of ‘communism’. From the point of view of political science these efforts are akin to the creation of a ‘civil’ or ‘political religion’. Both terms refer to a political ideology which has sociological and ideological similarities and may fulfil similar cultural and political functions to a religion.

Mika Aaltola describes one type of politico-religious role which is central in today’s world politics as follows:

They offer a hope of restoration and of a return to fundamental values. They do this by applying culturally embedded visions of right and wrong. These visions are often overtly religious in tone. ... The captivating and enigmatic mythological gallery of historical

¹⁷¹ Allen 1999. According to Jensen, the Jesuits invented the Latinized name “Confucius”, which is based on a very rare, honorific appellation Kongfuzi (孔夫子), ‘Grand Master Kong’. The usual Chinese appellation is Kongzi, ‘Master Kong’. Perhaps the Jesuits felt that the usual appellation would not set Confucius apart from all the other ‘Masters’, such as Laocius (Laozi) or Mencius (Mengzi).

¹⁷² *Ru* (儒) is a cognate of words referring to ‘weak, pliant’ which were pronounced similarly and are written with characters having the same phonetic element (e.g. 孺, 儒). As such, *Ru* may have been a derogatory term used by the non-*Ru*. See Waley 1989, 118, fn. 3.

figures provides a rich source of authority and charisma for the custodians of principle.¹⁷³

Today, there are many political actors in China behaving as such “custodians of principle”. Many of them, both on the side of the establishment and of the dissidents, use Traditional Learning, or more specifically, Confucianism, as their source of authority. Whether we label them promoters of civil or political religion depends on our angle of vision.

As Aaltola points out, civil religion is associated with pluralism, voluntarism and individualism, whereas political religion is often equated with coercive totalitarian systems. Political religion is often connected with Islam in particular.¹⁷⁴ “The distinction between civil religion and the more conservative formulation of political religion partially overlaps the distinction between society–centric and state–centric approaches to the problem of international order”, writes Aaltola.¹⁷⁵

Intriguingly, in China today we see processes furthering both civil and political religion at the same time, and those promoting a political religion–like ideology do not always represent the establishment. To an extent, the difference between Enlightenment and National Salvation is similar to the duality of civil and political religion; the former is more inward–oriented and the latter is more outward–oriented. Idealistically, Confucianism would belong firmly on the side of Enlightenment (or civil religion), but as noted above, in reality, Confucianism has often been used just as a sanctimonious façade.

¹⁷³ Aaltola 2008, 17.

¹⁷⁴ Aaltola 2008, 28–29.

¹⁷⁵ *Ibid.*

Chapter III

Confucianism old and new

Introduction to Chapter III

This chapter takes a closer look at Confucianism and how it has been reinterpreted and even reinvented by different actors. Earlier in this paper, Confucianism was discussed in relation to Traditional Learning. As has been pointed out, Confucianism does not equate with Traditional Learning, but the former unquestionably holds a central position as the core of the latter. In order to be able to discuss the role of Confucianism in Chinese society in a more nuanced manner, it is necessary to become acquainted with the basic concepts of Confucianism, and in particular, with how Confucianism is interpreted in China today.

Although the Party-state may wish to reinvent Chinese tradition as ‘harmony’ and present harmony as the essence of Confucianism, there are many dissenting views. This chapter focuses on the debate over the historical roots of contemporary Confucianism in China. It highlights the problems in constructing such interpretations of Confucianism or Traditional Learning which could not be contested. It demonstrates how different actors are able to find justification for widely differing views even when they are supposedly based on the very same roots.

According to the interpretation by the politically correct, Confucianism is collectivist and, as such, promotes a strong central authority to maintain social stability for the benefit of all the members of the collective. The ancient spirit of self-sacrifice forms the basis of modern patriotism. Confucius’s call for economic equality is well suited to the building of Modest Welfare. While early Confucian thinkers stated that people form the basis of the state, they said nothing about people being the masters of the state, which is in accordance with the communist ‘democratic centralism’.

Looking at the historical development of Confucianism provides a more polychromatic image. Confucianism has never been a

monolithic school of thought. One may roughly identify several stages of development during the imperial era, but the development was by no means rectilinear. Even very early on, the authenticity of certain Confucian scriptures was contested. In the 19th-century contestation between different groups of reformists and conservatives, the exegetics helped to form the front lines.

As noted in Chapter II, Confucianism as a living tradition came close to extinction following the nationalist revolution and then the victory of the communists in the civil war. Consequently, there were attempts to revive Confucianism throughout the 20th century. After the establishment of the People's Republic, the revivalist movement had better chances of success outside China. There it developed into so-called New Confucianism. When the Party-state's attitude towards Confucianism began to change in the 1980s, the New Confucian movement gained ground back in China as well. The most important task for the New Confucians has been to build a genealogical tree of ideas, which connects them back to the 'original' Confucians. The difficulty lies in defining what was 'original'. This has made the exegetics important once again.

As a result, it is possible to identify different generations of New Confucians, and furthermore, at least four different groupings within them that are active in China. The main branch, which may be regarded as the orthodox New Confucianism, is related to 'subjective' Confucianism from the 1500s, which emphasized the importance of innate moral awakening. Today, the proponents of the main branch call for replacing Marxism with Confucianism as an ideology. That is the goal of another branch as well, but its proponents are more militant and aim at establishing Confucianism as the national religion. While neither of these branches is likely to gain a larger foothold in China, the so-called Socialist Confucians who mix Marxism with Confucianism enjoy the support of the establishment. The middle ground is held by those few who believe that Traditional Learning may provide the basis for gradual political reform in the future.

One of most exciting elements in the debate related to history and tradition in China is the heated discussion taking place, not only among the academia but also the general public, about the nature of certain recently unearthed Confucian texts. During the early 2000s, the texts were published as 'layperson editions' and are consequently available to anyone interested in such matters. The

focus of the discussion is on whether the texts can shed light on the ‘original’ character of Confucianism, and if so, what that character might have been like.

This chapter introduces two different answers to the latter question by two scholars. Both see Confucius as an enlightened revolutionary, differing only in their views on whether the revolutionary ideals were democratic or proto-communist in nature. Interestingly enough, both of these views originate from the Chinese Academy of Social Sciences, arguably the most influential academic institution in the field of social sciences and philosophy in China.

What is Confucianism?

The description of Confucianism by Luo Guojie serves well as a concise introduction to the basic concepts and the character of Confucianism for the purposes of this paper. It is furthermore interesting how Luo Guojie justified the return to Confucian values in a book published by the Central Party School in 1998.¹⁷⁶

Luo sees the special value of Confucianism over other philosophical schools in China in its emphasis on morality as the basis for the stability of the country, harmony among the population, quality (*suzhi*, 素质) of the citizens and the betterment of human society as a whole. Although Mohism, which stresses the wellbeing of the people and the equality of all, used to be the favourite traditional philosophy of the Chinese communists, Luo disregards its ideals as too unrealistic. It is as if he is saying that the time for communism has not yet come.

Whereas Mohism has a certain revolutionary character, Confucianism has, in Luo’s opinion, always been favoured by the rulers in times of relative stability and peaceful development. That is because Confucianism ties politics with ethics: The most desirable

¹⁷⁶ Zhang Kemin (ed.) 1999. The title of the book translated into English is “Historical Questions from China and Abroad Discussed by Eight Scholars”. The following paragraphs are based on Luo Guojie 1999, 405–441, except where otherwise indicated.

quality of the ruler (or any man) is *ren* (仁), or ‘humaneness’,¹⁷⁷ which is also the main concept of Confucianism. To act according to *ren* is dependant on one’s ability to discard such erroneous ways which do not agree with *li* (礼), or ‘propriety’. *Li* is the other main concept of Confucianism and originally referred to ‘rites’ or ‘rituals’. Thus all action should have an ethical basis.¹⁷⁸ It illustrates the importance of *li* that Li Zehou, among others, has said that ‘the religion of rites’ (*lijiao*, 礼教) is the Chinese religion.¹⁷⁹

Luo breaks the core of Confucianism down into five components. First is *ren* which, from the point of view of rulers, means that they must love and protect their people, see to the needs of the people, and put the people before themselves in every respect. If that is not done, the people will rise against the rulers. Furthermore, the Neo-Confucians of the Song and Ming dynasties extended this love to encompass the whole world; humans and animals alike are all of the same origin. Luo quotes Zhang Zai (张载, 1020–1077): “Heaven is called Father, Earth is called Mother. ... People are my flesh, animals are my kind.”

Second, Luo sees Confucianism as inherently collectivist. According to Confucius, the only condition for attaining *ren* is to “constrain oneself and keep to *li*”.¹⁸⁰ One must not see, hear, say or do anything that is not in accordance with *li*. Luo defines *li*, or propriety, as the requirements of the political system, the restraints of the law, and ethical rules. Therefore, says Luo, *li* is equal to the interests of the state, society, and the collective. Luo quotes *Zuo zhuan*: “*Li* is what draws the borders, sets the governments and defines the classes for the benefit of our heirs”. And: “If *li* is not followed, the division between the upper and lower classes will become muddled, and how could the dynasty survive over generations then?”

¹⁷⁷ The translations of the Confucian philosophical concepts are continuously contested. Here it suffices to say that *ren*, often translated as ‘humaneness’, is the guiding principle of good human relations. By extension, *ren* also carried the meaning of ‘fraternity’ and other virtues befitting an upper-class knight, such as manliness and chivalry.

¹⁷⁸ On the relationship between *ren* and *li*, see Shun 2002.

¹⁷⁹ Li Zehou 2008, 343. Li Zehou maintains that Confucianism is not a philosophy in the Western sense and although it contains elements of a religion, it is not a true religion either. Instead, Confucianism is half-religion, half-philosophy, according to Li (Li Zehou 1994, 153).

¹⁸⁰ On the translation of the quotation, see Shun 2002, 61 and 71, fn. 19. See also fn. 109 above.

Li is also linked to *yi* (义), or ‘justice’, and ‘just’ is defined through the good of society. What differentiates the ‘gentlemen’, or those who adhere to *ren* and *li*, from the ‘petty men’, is that the former aim at benefiting the public, whereas the latter are driven only by self-interest.

Luo sees a link between Confucian collectivism and the age-old ideal of unity. According to Luo, Confucius was strongly against any insurgent activities by the vassal states, which together formed the united empire under the rule of one hegemon. The biggest danger, in Confucius’s thinking, was chaos and instability, which could threaten the unity of the empire. Confucius said: “When the Way prevails under Heaven, ritual music and campaigns of war all originate from the Son of Heaven; when the Way does not prevail under Heaven, ritual music and campaigns of war originate from the vassal lords” – which must not be. The mandate of the ruler is dependent on his ability to have his orders obeyed through the empire. In Luo’s interpretation, Confucius stressed that the authority of the central government is fundamental in safeguarding social stability and order.

According to Luo, this fundament is even more valid today than it was in Confucius’s days. Whereas the centralized state power in the imperial era stood for the oppressor class, today the state represents the people. Therefore, being on the side of centralized rule means promoting the wellbeing of the people as well as stability and unity.

Third, Luo stresses the connection between Confucian family values and the qualifications for civil servants. These family values predate Confucius and are usually presented as Five Constants (*wu chang*, 五常):¹⁸¹ father is to be just, mother is to be caring, elder brother is to be supportive, younger brother is to be respectful, son is to be filial. To act according to these five teachings is to adhere to *li*. Yanzi, one of Confucius’s contemporaries, said, recorded in *Chunqiu*: “The ruler commands and the ministers revere, the father is caring and the sons are filial, the elder brother is loving and the younger brother is respectful, the husband is gentle and the wife is agreeable, the mother-in-law is caring and the daughter-in-law is amenable;

¹⁸¹ Luo uses the term Five Teachings (*wu jiao*, 五教). The term Five Constants may also refer to the five cardinal virtues of Confucianism (which have been defined differently in different times).

thus is *li*.” Confucius said plainly: “The ruler shall rule, the minister shall administer, the father shall be fatherly, the *filius* shall be filial.”

Luo asks, how can one be expected to love one’s country and one’s nation if one doesn’t love one’s parents. Therefore, concludes Luo, the old Confucian maxim of “seeking for loyal ministers at the homes of filial sons” is still valid today.

Fourth, Luo commends Confucian idealism; how the early Confucians toiled for their own spiritual betterment even in dismal economic conditions. Such a spirit of self-sacrifice may, according to Luo, serve as the basis for patriotism and love for one’s nation. Though Luo doesn’t explicitly say so, the ethos of striving for spiritual instead of material wealth is well-suited to the realities of a developing country. Luo quotes Mencius: “There are those ennobled by Heaven and those ennobled by men. Those who are chivalrous (*ren*), just, loyal, trustworthy and who untiringly rejoice in the good, they are the ones ennobled by Heaven. The dukes, lords and councillors, they are the ones ennobled by men.” Luo gives Confucianism credit for advocating ennoblement by Heaven, interpreting it in the modern world as recognition through one’s morally exemplary conduct among the masses.

Fifth, Confucianism puts great emphasis on one’s self-cultivation. In Song-era Neo-Confucianism, the correct method (*gongfu*, 功夫) of self-cultivation became a value in itself due to the influence of Buddhist meditation practices. However, as Luo points out, in early Confucianism what mattered was the result of self-cultivation: it was the basis for keeping one’s family in order, ruling the country and pacifying All-Under-Heaven. In order to keep his people content and peaceful, the ruler must first cultivate himself. Similarly, for the wellbeing and stability of the nation, the moral education of the entire population is crucial.

All in all, Luo describes Confucianism as a tool for ruling the country, pacifying the population, stabilizing society, harmonizing the relations between people and raising the moral standards of the citizens. On the one hand, a Confucian government will profit, enrich and protect people, and on the other, educate, mould and guide people. While the government should help the population to prosper, it must also prevent mutually disruptive competition. Luo reminds people that Confucius urged his followers not to worry about poverty but about inequality, equality being crucial for social stability. For the

Confucians, it is only the ‘petty men’ who strive for personal gain. According to Luo, the political content of Confucianism is embodied in the principle of disregarding small gains in order not to lose sight of great accomplishments.

Luo sees the relevance of Confucianism for government in other spheres as well. According to Confucius, it is more effective to use education than punishment to get the people to follow the conventions of society: punishment does not develop a sense of shame in people, whereas governance based on virtue (*de*, 德) does. Confucian rulers must follow the ‘Kingly Way’ based on virtue instead of the way of the hegemon based on might. Luo quotes Jia Yi (贾谊, 200–168 BCE), noting that even Chairman Mao praised this text highly:

When the ruler cultivates punishment, people turn their backs on him with resentment, but when the ruler cultivates propriety, people cling to him. ... To guide the people with virtuous teachings will make virtue and respect widespread and the spirits of the people will be joyful; whereas to drive the people with laws and orders will only increase the number of laws and orders while the minds of the people will be gloomy. The common feelings of joy and gloom are the reasons for the calamity or prosperity of the state.

Similarly, continues Luo, the reason for the demise of the Qin dynasty, the first dynasty ever to unify all China, was the tyrannical nature of its rule. However, Luo notes that even according to Confucius, the rulers must use both soft and hard measures, in a balanced manner.

For Confucians, the rulers are praiseworthy due to their exemplary behaviour. The virtue of the ruler is like the wind, which makes the grass lean in a certain direction. Luo quotes Zhuge Liang (诸葛亮, 181–234):

The Lord of the People shall first straighten his character and only then issue orders. If the character of the ruler is not straight, the orders will not be followed. If the Lord’s orders are not followed, chaos will emerge.

Luo notes that for the Confucians, the principle of ruling the country is the idea of people forming the basis of the state. *The Book of History* states: “The people (*min*, 民) are the sole root (*ben*, 本) of the state”

and “Heaven must act according to the wishes of the people”, suggesting that the Mandate of Heaven which the Emperor should have is dependent on the ability of the ruler to safeguard the wellbeing of his subjects. Mencius said, “the people are most valuable, the state comes second, and the ruler is the least important”. Xunzi, another developer of early Confucianism, compared the ruler to a boat and the people to water: water supports the boat but may also capsize it. It is worthwhile mentioning here that in Chinese, the principle of people as the basis (*minben*, 民本) is semantically different from democracy which, in Chinese, refers to “people as the masters” (*minzhu*, 民主). Therefore, the Communist Party may safely promote *minben* as it has no direct linkage with democracy.

Lastly, Luo praises the Confucian emphasis on personal virtue as the sole criterion for selecting people for office. One’s birth is of no significance. This ideal prevailed throughout the entire imperial era, when the principal way into office was the examination system, a ladder of successive examinations whereby the identity of the candidates was hidden from the evaluators of the examination essays. However, it must be pointed out that the system had its loopholes,¹⁸² exceptions were regularly made, and since success in the examinations required years of concentrated study, the ladder was within reach of the offspring of rich families only.

Naturally, Luo points to the negative elements of Confucianism as well. The fact that Confucianism does not question the class-society is something to be condemned. The Neo-Confucianism that became prevalent during the Song era over-emphasized filiality (*xiao*, 孝), and the Three Cardinal Leads (*san gang*, 三纲)—ruler leads subject, father leads son, husbands leads wife—were used just to protect the feudal rule. In the words of Luo, Neo-Confucianism went astray in its demand for “fallacious loyalty and fallacious filiality”. However, Luo warns against too one-sided criticism. It is only natural that children should respect their parents. Confucianism also puts the good of the state before that of the ruling class.

¹⁸² See e.g. the vivid account in Spence 2007, 54–57.

Confucianism in the late imperial era

Confucianism today is not a monolithic school of thought, nor has it ever been. Like any tradition with a long history, it has gone through various transformations and restorations. In order to properly understand the discussion related to Traditional Learning and Confucianism today, it is necessary to take a look at Confucianism as a phenomenon in intellectual history.

Historically, Confucianism during the imperial era may be divided into three stages of development. (1) After the time of Confucius and his personal disciples, his thinking was further developed by Mencius (Mengzi, 孟子, ca. 371–ca. 289 BCE) and a contemporary of the latter, Xunzi (荀子). During the rise of the Qin Kingdom, which favoured Legalism over other schools of thought, and the consequent Qin dynasty (221–207 BCE) under which China became a unified empire for the first time in history, Confucianism was almost eradicated.

(2) The Han dynasty (206 BCE–220) marked a revival of Confucianism, which then replaced Legalism, associated with the oppressiveness of the Qin rule, as the official ideology in the empire. During the centuries of disintegration and war which followed the fall of the Han dynasty, Buddhism and Taoism gained ground at the expense of Confucianism.

(3) Confucianism underwent a revival first during the Tang dynasty (618–907), thanks to the rectification efforts of Han Yu (韩愈, 768–824), and then an actual rebirth in the Song dynasty (960–1127), resulting in the rise of Neo-Confucianism (*Xin Ruxue*, 新儒学). One of the branches of Neo-Confucianism, based on the teachings of Cheng Yi (程颐, 1033–1107) and Zhu Xi, became the orthodox form of Confucianism for the remaining imperial era.

During the Qing dynasty (1644–1911), further branches of Neo-Confucianism emerged. The so-called School of Song Learning continued the Neo-Confucian orthodoxy, while the so-called Empirical Research School (also known as the School of Evidential Learning) called for discovering ‘the truth through the facts’, especially in the works preceding Neo-Confucianism. The historical roots of both Contemporary New Confucianism and Traditional Learning can be found in the same source, namely the Empirical Research School of the Qing dynasty.

Song-dynasty Neo-Confucianism, which had originally risen as a counter-reaction to the rise of Buddhism and had aimed to re-establish the central role of Confucianism in China, was split into two opposing poles as early as the Song dynasty. The official orthodoxy during the Qing era, the School of Song Learning, was based on the teachings of Cheng Yi and Zhu Xi. Its central concept was *li* (理) or the ‘rational principle’. *Li* exists ‘above form’ (*xing’ershang*, 形而上); expressed in modern terms, it is a metaphysical concept. Through personal cultivation a person could make his nature accord with the Heavenly *li*.¹⁸³

The opponents of the Cheng-Zhu orthodoxy followed the teachings of Lu Jiuyuan (陆九渊, 1139–1192) and Wang Yangming (王阳明, 1472–1528).¹⁸⁴ They urged scholars to shun the ‘idle theorizing’ of the rationalists and stated that “[the] mind, when properly trained and cultivated” would serve as an adequate “guide for statecraft policy”.¹⁸⁵ Their central concept was *xin* (心), or mind (often translated as ‘heart-mind’), which referred to Wang Yangming’s idea that everyone possessed ‘innate knowledge’ (*liang zhi*, 良知), a moral consciousness that came intuitively to a person through self-cultivation.¹⁸⁶ This idea was not devoid of Chan-Buddhist influences. The academics in the communist era classified the Cheng-Zhu school as objective idealism and the Lu-Wang school as subjective idealism, ‘idealism’ being used as a derogatory label.

Although some scholars during the early Qing dynasty regarded Cheng-Zhu learning “as the basis for keeping Ming loyalism alive”, through the influence of the Tongcheng School, personified in Yao Nai (姚鼐, 1731–1815), Cheng-Zhu learning gradually became the orthodoxy favoured by the Manchu rulers. The civil service examinations were based on Cheng-Zhu learning, the Kangxi Emperor (ruled 1661–1722) ordered the installation of Zhu Xi in

¹⁸³ Lodén 2006, 112, 115.

¹⁸⁴ Mou Zongsan calls the conventional dichotomy Zhu Xi–Wang Yangming oversimplified and notes that there were altogether nine leading personalities during the Song and Ming dynasties, and three (not two) major schools developed as a consequence. Professor Chen Lai from Peking University identifies four schools (Bresciani 2001, 366, 436).

¹⁸⁵ Elman 1991, 76, 81, 84–85.

¹⁸⁶ The guiding principle of Wang Yangming’s thought was uniting knowledge with action: “Knowledge is the beginning of action, action is the result of knowledge” (*Chuanxilu* I.28).

the Confucian temple, and an imperial edition of the Four Books (considered the core of Confucius's teachings) was completed during the reign of the Yongzheng Emperor (ruled 1722–1735).¹⁸⁷

The proponents of 'empirical research' (*kaozheng*, 考证) favoured textual study and were against the metaphysical character of Song Learning. They became collectively known as the Empirical Research School or the School of Han Learning, as opposed to the School of Song Learning. They wished to purify the classics of heterodox elements, such as Buddhism, and restore their textual integrity. Such a jumble of interpretations had accumulated since the Song era that it was impossible to see the real core of Confucius's teachings. Propriety, *li* (礼), had to be returned to the central position in Confucianism again.¹⁸⁸ To some degree, the empirical research scholars resembled those Christians who, during the Reformation, started questioning the sacrosanctity of the Latin version of the Bible on the basis of Greek and Hebrew linguistics.

For instance, Gu Yanwu (顾炎武, 1613–82) attacked Neo-Confucianist (especially Wang Yangming's) 'speculation' and wished to promote such solid scholarship as had been practised by the ancient text school of the Han dynasty.¹⁸⁹ Gu opined that the scholars needed to return to the roots and sweep aside the jungle of later interpretations. At first, no impiety towards Cheng-Zhu learning was intended on the part of the empirical research scholars, but by the 1750s, their school had become a serious challenger to the orthodoxy.¹⁹⁰

The Empirical Research School evolved into different branches. The split had its roots in the division between the scholars involved in the 'exegetical studies' (*jingxue*, 经学) during the Han dynasty—the Ancient Text School and the New Text School—but the divisive lines were somewhat different. The infamous first emperor of Qin had ordered all Confucian texts to be burned, and thus Confucianism was first revived on the basis of oral tradition, and was written down only after the fall of the Qin dynasty, during the Western Han Dynasty.

¹⁸⁷ Chow 1994b, 185, 190, 193.

¹⁸⁸ Chow 1994a, 181.

¹⁸⁹ According to Torbjörn Lodén (2006, 138), we must thank the School of Han Learning for establishing the scientific foundation for classical sinology, aptly called *hanxue* in Chinese.

¹⁹⁰ Chow 1994b, 190–191.

These came to be called ‘new texts’ (*jinwen*, 今文) when a selection of pre-Qin texts, ‘ancient texts’ (*guwen*, 古文), were found during the Eastern Han dynasty.¹⁹¹ There was much debate on the value of the new discoveries, but finally, during the Tang dynasty, an official edition of the Classics was produced which consisted mainly of the ancient texts.¹⁹² Although the Ancient Text School thus gained the upper hand, later studies have shown that many of the ancient texts were, in actual fact, forgeries.

During the late Qing dynasty, the old exegetical debate between the Ancient Text School and the New Text School surfaced again. As Torbjörn Lodén has noted, it was probably natural that the focus of the empirical research scholars would shift from an exclusive study of pre-Qin era ‘ancient texts’ to include the Han-era ‘new texts’ as well.¹⁹³ A branch split off the Empirical Research School and became known as the New Text School.

¹⁹¹ The schools were not just interested in the authenticity of the texts, but also got involved in the politics of their time. The *guwen* school sided with the ‘usurper’ Wang Mang, who established the short-lived New Dynasty (9–25) (Gernet 1985, 164). In turn, Dong Zhongshu (董仲舒, 179–104 BCE) of the New Text School rallied support for the unified, central rule of the Han dynasty. With that aim, he promoted the idea of the Heavenly Mandate being dependent on the wellbeing of the people: The ruler receives his mandate to rule from Heaven. If the ruler harms his people, Heaven will take the mandate away. Thus unity is preserved only through stability. Dong Zhongshu also formulated the Three Cardinal Leads. Dong Zhongshu’s ideas are perhaps the most lasting philosophical heritage of the two schools. During the continued rivalry of the school after the fall of the Han dynasty, the *jinwen* school reflected a ‘cabbalistic’ tradition which tended to look at the texts as a collection of prophecies, whereas the *guwen* school was characterized by a rationalist, but also moralizing and ritualistic approach. Dong Zhongshu also presented Confucius as a mythical, supernatural being (Shimada 1990, 127).

¹⁹² Song Zhiming 2009, 266.

¹⁹³ Lodén 2006, 152–153. The usage of the term *guwen* meaning ‘ancient texts’ must not be confused with the other usage meaning ‘ancient style’. Under the influence of the Tongcheng School, so-called ‘eight-legged essays’ were the required form of essays in the civil service examinations, while the ‘ancient prose’ of the Tang and Song masters was seen as the stylistic basis for the eight-legged essays. In contrast, some proponents of the School of Han Learning maintained that so-called ‘parallel prose’ was closer to the style used in the days of Confucius. When the Movement for Ancient Prose rose during the Tang dynasty, it was directed against parallel prose, which was considered artificial and unnatural. So paradoxically, the School of Han Learning was in favour of *guwen*, meaning ‘ancient texts’, but not necessarily of *guwen* meaning ‘ancient style’.

Scholastically, the New Text School doubted not only the Song-era interpretations of the ancient texts but the actual authenticity of the texts themselves; they criticized the “‘false Classics’ in order to peel down to the ‘true Classics’ of timeless transcendent importance”.¹⁹⁴ They wished to analyze the Confucian texts against the historical background, the Former Han era, during which the Confucian state orthodoxy was first formed. They showed that *Zuo zhuan*, a collection of historical accounts and one of the ancient texts, was not a commentary on the *Chunqiu* annals (the “Spring and Autumn Annals”, a record of historical events included among the Six Classics, namely the holiest books in the Confucian canon, and traditionally accredited to Confucius), but was fabricated to seem so during the Western Han era.¹⁹⁵ Instead, they turned their attention to *Gongyang zhuan*, which really was a commentary on the *Chunqiu* annals, and thus the New Text School also became known as the Gongyang School.

Some proponents of the new texts used their studies to advocate some reformist, anti-authoritarian ideas. The *Gongyang zhuan* puts emphasis on the Heavenly Mandate of the ruler and states that without the mandate, a ruler is a usurper. It is in the New Text School edition from Later Han where history is described as the three-stage process from the Age of Chaos to that of Modest Welfare (*Xiaokang*) and finally to the age of Great Community (*Datong*). As noted in Chapter II, Kang Youwei presented Confucius as a prophet of the Great Community, a utopia without national frontiers and social classes and where universal peace prevails. He stated that the West, with its modern values, was already on its way towards the utopia. Kang Youwei subscribed to Western values but found them within Confucianism, in contrast with many other reformists who saw Western values only as a tool (*yong*, 用) for strengthening the Chinese essence (*ti*, 体).¹⁹⁶

Interestingly, in view of its anti-authoritarianism and eschatological tendencies, the Gongyang School bore some

¹⁹⁴ Levenson 1965, vol. I, 94.

¹⁹⁵ Lodén 2006, 153, 155. Levenson 1965, vol. I, 81–82.

¹⁹⁶ Lodén 2006, 154. Song Zhiming 2009, 256. Levenson 1965, vol. I, 77, 81. Gernet 1985, 594.

The *ti-yong* dichotomy was central to the philosophical debate of 19th- and early 20th-century China, in particular among the statecraft-oriented empirical research scholars (see below).

resemblance to the Lu–Wang School. Even the attitude towards ‘understanding’ Confucianism was similar. Kang Youwei opined that the followers of the Empirical Research School “read the classics, but not the spirit contained therein”,¹⁹⁷ thus echoing Wang Yangming’s famous words: “The learned men of our time do not understand that they should look for the essence of the Six Classics in their hearts but instead search in vain for shadows and echoes and get stuck in the jumble of semantics in their empty-headed belief that they may so find the true meaning of the scriptures”.¹⁹⁸ On the other hand, while the Lu–Wang school can be described as ‘spiritual localism’,¹⁹⁹ the Gongyang School followed a more conventional, Confucian approach and “virtually took unity to be the sole manifestation of the Tao/Way”.²⁰⁰

‘Ancient texts’ became in turn a rallying cry for those among the main branch empirical research scholars, hereafter collectively referred to as the School of Han Learning, who wanted to preserve the Chinese tradition intact and guard it against foreign, first Manchu and then Western, influences. Gu Yanwu was a staunch Ming loyalist who advocated the ancient ideal of regional rule or ‘divided enoffment’ (*fengjian*, 封建) instead of central government.²⁰¹ He saw the “introverted tendency of Neo-Confucianism”, especially Lu–Wang learning, as the cause of the scholars’ “unwillingness to oppose the new rulers openly”. Another opponent of the Cheng–Zhu orthodoxy was Wang Fuzhi (王夫之, 1619–93), who attacked the Manchu rule on the basis of their ethnicity, “thereby deviating from the culturalism that we may identify as part of mainstream Confucianism” as Lodén writes.²⁰²

¹⁹⁷ Shimada 1990, 59.

¹⁹⁸ From “Inscription at Pavilion for Revering the Scriptures”. Translated into Finnish in Kallio 2008, 165–170.

¹⁹⁹ Kallio 2009, “Conclusions”.

²⁰⁰ Li 1999, 178.

²⁰¹ See de Bary & Lufrano 2000, 39, for a translation (by William Rowe) of a related essay by Gu Yanwu. Zeng Jing (曾靜, 1679–1736) explained *fengjian* being similar to the ‘subsidiarity principle’ of the European Union: “Though the Son of Heaven presided ..., the job of nurturing the people and the responsibility for governing them devolved on the enoffed rulers of each smaller region.” (Spence 2001, 166.)

²⁰² Lodén 2006, 133, 136–137.

The School of Han Learning evolved still further. By looking at the historical context in which the earliest Confucian writings were born, the scholars came to put emphasis on the other philosophical schools of the pre-Qin era as well. Most significantly, some scholars raised Mohism above Confucianism as the most worthwhile ancient tradition. Mozi, the founder of Mohism, had preached ‘reciprocal love’ (*jian’ai*, 兼爱; often translated somewhat misleadingly as ‘universal love’²⁰³), which was seen as a more positive concept than the Confucian ‘fraternal love’ (*bo’ai*, 博爱). The latter, in its emphasis on family and friends (that is, the likes of oneself), was deemed narrow and conservative. Xunzi also enjoyed a renaissance, with some scholars placing him on an equal footing with Confucius (see below). These scholars became known as the School of the Multiple Masters (*zhuzi*, 诸子).²⁰⁴ In regard to the development of Confucianism, this school was the beginning of what I venture to call ‘modern’ exegetical studies.

In the latter half of the 19th century, intellectual orthodoxy in the form of the Cheng-Zhu School of Neo-Confucianism regained ground. The Empirical Research School and exegetical studies, especially the New Text School, were accused of making the spiritual basis of society vulnerable in the face of foreign invasions and rural unrest. The central figure in this was Zeng Guofan (曾国藩, 1811–1872), an eminent civil and military official who became famous for suppressing the Taiping Rebellion in 1864. Zeng was a follower of Yao Nai and wanted to revitalize the Tongcheng School.²⁰⁵ This current of orthodox Confucianism sowed the seeds of its own destruction.

Ironically, the writings of Zeng Guofan had an impact on the rise of the anti-Confucian New Culture Movement in the first decades of the 20th century. Zeng stated that ancient learning must be of practical use to the present society (*jing shi zhi yong*, 经世致用). This slogan was often repeated by Chiang Kai-shek, but Mao Zedong, who was heavily influenced by the New Culture Movement in his youth, also quoted Zeng Guofan frequently in his writings.²⁰⁶

Zeng’s slogan had initially been invented by Gu Yanwu. While promoting exegetical studies, Gu had emphasized that the aims of

²⁰³ I have briefly discussed the translation of these terms in Kallio 2007, 121 fn. 7.

²⁰⁴ Makeham 2009.

²⁰⁵ Gernet 1985, 592.

²⁰⁶ Meisner 2007, 5.

such studies should not be academic, but practical.²⁰⁷ This approach, revitalized by Zeng Guofan and others, gave impetus to the New Text School and further to ‘modern’ exegetical studies. Its followers accused Neo-Confucianism of being impractical and subjective. Instead, they championed a pragmatic approach to resolving China’s dilemmas.²⁰⁸

Zhang Binglin took empirical research and ‘modern’ exegetical studies to a new level. He saw Confucius as a founder of only one of China’s traditional schools of thought. Zhang was most critical of the Neo-Confucian orthodoxy, which he considered ‘religion’, and promoted Traditional Learning instead, meaning traditional Chinese philosophies by and large as opposed to the ‘Western’ value system. Zhang continued the nationalist ethos of the School of Han Learning and wrote critically about the *ke di* (客帝) or ‘foreign emperors’ in Chinese history, referring also to the Qing dynasty.²⁰⁹

One might cursorily say that the example of Zeng Guofan, among others, triggered a further modernization of the exegetical studies by shifting their focus to statecraft, and Zhang Binglin helped to transform them, especially the tradition of the School of Han Learning, into Traditional Learning. Together with the nationalist revolution, this signified the end of Confucianism as a national ideology.

The emergence of New Confucianism

Following the nationalist revolution and the communist victory, Confucianism as a living tradition was practically eradicated in Mainland China. It was not faring much better elsewhere either. Though Confucianism has been accepted and even promoted in the Republic of China on Taiwan, one could argue that it has survived there only as ceremonial and instrumental vulgar Confucianism (see Lin Anwu’s critique of the Nationalists’ Confucianism below). Consequently, there was a need to reinvent it.

²⁰⁷ See e.g. de Bary & Lufrano 2000, 35–36.

²⁰⁸ See e.g. Gernet 1985, 592–595; and Mote 2003, 929–933.

²⁰⁹ Shimada 1990, 10–11, 111–115.

In the first half of the 20th century, scholars like Liang Shuming and Feng Youlan attempted to re-create Confucianism through the introduction of Western philosophical and scientific concepts into the traditional discourse. In 1958, a group of scholars published a declaration in two Hong Kong journals, entitled in English “Declaration on Behalf of Chinese Culture Respectfully Announced to the People of the World”.²¹⁰ It is an “emotionally charged apologetic for traditional Chinese culture” which “rejects the positivist paradigm ushered in by modernity and Westernization and demands a place for Chinese cultural values on the world stage”, writes John Makeham.²¹¹

The term ‘Contemporary New Confucianism’ (*xiandai/dangdai Xin Ruxue/Rujia*, 现代/当代新儒学/儒家) was not commonly used until the popularization of the writings by Du Weiming (杜维明, name also transcribed as Tu Wei-ming, b. 1940) in the late 1980s.²¹² Du has lived most of his life outside Mainland China, first in Taiwan and then in the United States, but he frequently lectured on the Mainland in the early 1980s. His selected writings were published on the Mainland in 1992 together with a foreword by Fang Keli (方克力, then Professor of Philosophy at Nankai University, b. 1938). Du presents New Confucianism as the third stage of Confucianism which follows the first stage of ‘classical’ Confucianism, which lasted until the end of the Han dynasty, and the second stage of Neo-Confucianism during the Song, Yuan and Ming dynasties.²¹³

According to John Makeham, the single most immediate factor for the flourishing of New Confucianism in the 1980s was the Chinese government’s decision to nominate it as the subject of one of the key research projects under the 7th five-year plan in 1986. The project

²¹⁰ Makeham 2003, 27–28. Song Zhiming 2009, 297.

²¹¹ Makeham 2003, 28. John Makeham argues (*ibid.*, 27–28) that the declaration was merely another manifestation of Confucian revivalism. He opines that the tendency to retrospectively treat the declaration as the beginning of New Confucianism is somewhat artificial.

²¹² Du Weiming 1993, Fang Keli’s “Foreword”, 1–2. Du is commonly known in the media as the “foremost New Confucian thinker” though Makeham questions whether he is a Confucian in the first place (see Makeham 2003, 41). *Nanfang renwu zhoukan* listed Du among the top fifty public intellectuals (*gonggong zhishifenzi*, 公共知识分子) in China in 2004. The only other person on that list who is also mentioned in this paper is Qin Hui, a well-known blogger (see below). (<http://business.sohu.com/s2004/zhishifenzi50.shtml>. Accessed 29 Oct 2010.)

²¹³ *Ibid.*, 267.

was directed by Fang Keli.²¹⁴ Since then, it has become an important part of the New Confucian discourse to identify the lineage of New Confucianism and thus tie it together with the longer Confucian tradition. Naturally, the question of lineage is a question of identity. It is also a way to create a distinction between “us, the orthodox” and “they, the heterodox”. There are two traditions for establishing the lineage of the (Confucian) Way, the *daotong* (道统).²¹⁵ During the Han and Tang dynasties, emphasis was on the concrete teacher–student continuum whereas the Song dynasty Neo-Confucians stressed ideology and the interpretation of Confucianism. The New Confucians have followed the Neo-Confucian practice, which is only natural in a situation where the tradition has effectively been severed.

Most contemporary New Confucians would probably agree that New Confucianism follows the lineage of historical Confucianism which was connected to the New Text School and the Gongyang School on the one hand, and the ‘subjective’ Neo-Confucianism of Lu Jiuyuan and Wang Yangming on the other. For the majority of New Confucians, this is the ‘true’ lineage, in contrast to the Qing-era orthodoxy centred upon the ‘objective’ Neo-Confucianism of Cheng Yi and Zhu Xi and plagued by the exegetical studies (especially the School of Han Learning). Some would even identify Kang Youwei and Liang Qichao as the first New Confucians.²¹⁶

The New Confucians are customarily divided into different ‘generations’. Naturally, differences exist when it comes to naming the ‘members’ of any given generation in different sources. The genealogy has been extensively discussed by Umberto Bresciani (2001) and John Makeham (2008). Makeham warns against seeing

²¹⁴ Makeham 2008, 34. Makeham 2003, 71.

²¹⁵ Zheng Jiadong 1994, 184. In Chinese, the concept of *daotong* carries a deeper meaning than just ‘lineage’. The concept also implies ‘the right, constant tradition’. Many a ruler aspired to have the image of the real follower or protector of *daotong* in order to boost his political legitimacy (*zhengtong*, 正统, originally meaning ‘proper succession’). One should realize that in China, religion and politics were never separated in a similar manner to Europe. The ‘worldly’ ruler was always the ‘spiritual’ ruler as well (Zheng Jiadong 1994, 185). This aspect is equally important in today’s China.

²¹⁶ Makeham 2008, 37–38.

a linear line of transmission and notes that there may be Confucian revivalists other than those who may be labelled as New Confucians.²¹⁷

In the following general overview, I introduce the main progenitors of New Confucianism, based mainly on an article by Zheng Jiadong (郑家栋, b. 1956, formerly at the Chinese Academy of Social Sciences), dubbed the ‘grandmaster’ of Chinese Confucians.²¹⁸ The article was published in the first volume of the book series entitled *Yuan Dao* (原道), “The Original Way”, by the Chinese Academy of Social Sciences in 1994. The series was meant to probe the question of the ‘Way’ (Tao) of Chinese traditional culture: where is it coming from and where is it leading to? Zheng’s article discusses the lineage of New Confucianism.

The first generation (the 1930s) is usually said to include Liang Shuming, Xiong Shili (熊十力, 1885–1968), Zhang Junmai (张君勱, also known as Carsun Chang, 1886–1969), Qian Mu (钱穆, 1895–1990) and sometimes even Feng Youlan. They were active in Mainland China mainly before the establishment of the People’s Republic.

Zheng Jiadong labels Liang Shuming a “practical Confucian” who regarded as central one’s ability to turn Inner Sageliness (*neisheng*) into Outer Kingliness (*waiwang*). Liang Shuming believed the Chinese culture (Confucian tradition) dictates that China cannot enter democracy. He himself was not interested in the lineages; on the contrary, he regarded himself first and foremost as a Buddhist.²¹⁹ Nevertheless, he holds a very important position among the Mainland New Confucians. As mentioned above, he was severely criticized by Mao Zedong.

Xiong Shili was very much a follower of the exegetical studies (*jingxue*) in that he saw Confucianism as not at odds with the scientific method. Xiong maintained that ‘objective’ Neo-Confucianism naturally leads one to look for the reason (*li*) in nature and therefore it has the potential to engender scientific methods. In contrast to Liang Shuming, Xiong believed that Confucius’s practical orientation (*waiwang*) included sympathy for the working people, communality, equality and democracy. Xiong saw Confucius as the creator of Confucianism who established *ren* (humaneness) as its central

²¹⁷ Ibid., 44.

²¹⁸ I have also taken note of the genealogies presented in Liu Shuxian 2008, 169–171; Makeham 2003, 34–44; and Solé-Farras 2008, 15–16.

²¹⁹ Zheng Jiadong 1994, 164. Li 2009, 172, 181. Lodén 2006, 171.

concept. In comparison with the traditional Neo-Confucians (Zhu Xi had stressed Confucius's role as a transmitter), this constituted a paradigm shift. Xiong regarded both Mencius and Xunzi as less worth following than Confucius.²²⁰

Xiong Shili's take on Confucianism has been dubbed *dangdai Xin Rujia* (当代新儒家), a term meaning literally 'contemporary Neo-Confucianism'. This term, favoured by the New Confucians outside Mainland China, implies a connection with the Song-Ming Neo-Confucianism. In contrast, the term used on the Mainland, *xiandai Xin Ruxue* (现代新儒学), 'modern New Confucian learning', emphasizes the 'modernity' (post-May 4th origin) of the thought.²²¹

Feng Youlan promoted 'New Cheng-Zhu Neo-Confucianism' (*Xin Lixue*, 新理学). Feng professed the Cheng-Zhu orthodoxy and wished to create a 'new metaphysics' centring on *li* (the rational principle).²²² However, "one of the most intensely debated issues in New Confucian studies is whether Feng Youlan is a New Confucian."²²³ Some Chinese scholars have opined that instead of continuing the tradition of Neo-Confucianism, Feng merely duplicated it.²²⁴ Liu Shuxian (刘述先, see below) says that Feng "was incapable of displaying the strength of character of a traditional scholar".²²⁵

The second generation (the 1960s) consists of three followers of Xiong Shili who were signatories of the 1958 Declaration and mainly active outside Mainland China, namely Mou Zongsan (牟宗三, 1909–1995), Xu Fuguan (徐复观, 1903–1982) and Tang Junyi (唐君毅, 1909–1978). Zheng Jiadong stresses the importance of Mou Zongsan, whose disciple he professes himself to be.

Like Xiong Shili, Mou Zongsan recognized Confucius as the creator of Confucianism. In particular, Mou saw Confucius as the first to introduce Inner Sageliness or self-cultivation (*neisheng*) to balance Outer Kingliness or practical orientation (*waiwang*).²²⁶ Unlike Xiong, Mou was not a proponent of the exegetical studies and believed that

²²⁰ Zheng Jiadong 1994, 163. Makeham 2008, 158. Liang Tao 2009.

²²¹ See Makeham 2003, 18 fn. 7.

²²² Song Zhiming 2009, 297.

²²³ Makeham 2003, 35.

²²⁴ Bresciani 2001, 209.

²²⁵ Quoted in Song Zhiming 2009, 297.

²²⁶ Liang Tao 2009.

the real meaning of Confucius cannot be found in the Six Classics. Instead, Mou maintained that the essence of Confucianism exists independent of whether the Classics actually record the words of Confucius or not.²²⁷

Mou was very critical of the Song and Ming dynasty ‘rationalist’ Neo-Confucians of the Cheng-Zhu school who had emphasized argumentation (finding justification, *yi*, and rational principle, *li*) over moral self-cultivation. In particular, Mou criticized Zhu Xi for replacing the Five Classics with the Four Books (see “The early lineage of Confucianism”, below) and for basing their teachings on *Daxue*, “The Great Learning”, instead of the *Analects* or *Mencius*.²²⁸ *Daxue* was originally a chapter of *Liji*, “The Book of Rites”, and was probably written as a guide for the ruling elite, teaching them to make their personal lives and families examples of tranquillity and order so that the state would also become well governed.

Mou objected to the ethos present in *Daxue*, namely that one’s ‘sincerity of thought’ or morality is dependent on the ‘investigation of things’, or empirical knowledge. Mou did not see such rationalism and instrumentalism as the way to real ‘autonomous morality’. Mou himself opined that the teachings of Confucius and Mencius are ultimately like the Kantian ‘metaphysics of morals’ which argues for an *a priori* basis for morality. In the Chinese context, this means the unity and oneness of the mind, nature and Heaven. Zhu Xi and Wang Yangming had mutually opposing views on the relation between these.²²⁹

Mou’s approach is a continuation of the ‘subjective’ Neo-Confucianism of Wang Yangming. This tendency is also reflected in the 1958 Declaration (Chapter 6), which calls for innate moral

²²⁷ Zheng Jiadong 1994, 166–170, 186–187. Liang Tao 2009.

²²⁸ Zheng Jiadong 1994, 174–175.

²²⁹ *Ibid.*, 175–178. The *Doctrine of the Mean* states: “One’s nature is destined by Heaven” (天命之谓性). Zhu Xi paraphrased this by saying: “Heaven bestows on the beings their destiny and what the beings receive is their nature” (天所赋为命, 物所受为性). Diametrically contrasting Zhu Xi, Wang Yangming wrote: “The constant Way is encapsulated in the Six Classics. The Way appears as destiny in Heaven, as nature in man, and as heart (mind) in one’s body. The heart (mind), nature and destiny are all one and the same.” The word translated as ‘destiny’ or ‘to destine’ is *ming* (命), which in Wang Yangming’s interpretation refers to ‘the meaning of life’ rather than ‘something preordained’ (Kallio 2008, 171–172, fn. 1).

awakening.²³⁰ The Declaration also accuses the Qing-era Empirical Research School of making people lose sight of the ‘real’ tradition.

Xu Fuguan’s approach differed significantly from that of Mou Zongsan. Whereas Mou saw Confucianism as a philosophical system with a metaphysical core, Xu paid attention to the practical orientation (*waiwang*) of Confucianism and its relation to statecraft. While Xu regarded the *minben* ideal (men are the basis of the state) as resembling democracy in principle, he lamented that the Confucians became the rulers’ puppets even during the Han dynasty.²³¹

The third generation (the 1980s) may be said to include at least Du Weiming (b. 1940), Yu Yingshi (余英时, b. 1930) and Liu Shuxian (b. 1934). Du and Yu have mostly worked in the United States and Liu in Hong Kong. According to Bresciani, their common feature is that they all condemn political Marxism but value Marxism as a historical theory and social science. Their Confucian awakening was linked to the demise of the Weberian theory of Confucianism.²³²

Today, Du Weiming is also classified as one of the ‘Boston Confucians’ together with Professor Robert C. Neville (b. 1939). Neville’s field of research is comparative theology, and his aim is to show that Confucianism does not have “limited East Asian ethnic application” but is actually a “portable tradition” like Christianity.²³³

John Makeham sees Liu Shuxian as the most prominent successor of Mou Zongsan. Liu campaigns for “spiritual Confucianism” (as opposed to Du Weiming’s “Confucian capitalism”) and calls for “honouring the moral nature” instead of “following the path of inquiry and study”.²³⁴ The latter phrase refers to the ‘rationalist’ Neo-Confucians.

Liu Shuxian acknowledges that because the Chinese tradition emphasizes the Grand Unity (*Da yitong*) as a value in itself, democracy with its notion of pluralism is not compatible with Confucianism.

²³⁰ Zheng Jiadong 1994, 175. John Makeham disputes (2008, 162) this interpretation of the Declaration by Zheng Jiadong.

²³¹ Makeham 2003, 204. Lodén 2006, 178.

²³² Bresciani 2001, 389–391. Solé-Farràs 2008, 15.

²³³ Neville 2000, 1–2.

²³⁴ Makeham 2008, 71–72.

However, Liu says, the values of liberty and equality may be implanted into Confucianism.²³⁵

The fourth generation (late 1990s) entered the stage after the death of Mou Zongsan. John Makeham sees Professor Lin Anwu (b. 1957, National Taiwan Normal University) as a central figure in that group. Lin Anwu may perhaps be seen as a successor to Xu Fuguan. Liu Shuxian has expressed his opposition to Lin’s “critical Confucianism”, and Lin has criticized the “dogmatization” of Mou Zongsan’s teachings.²³⁶

Lin Anwu asserts that although Xiong Shili and Mou Zongsan were gravely concerned about the loss of meaning experienced by the Chinese nation, their newly built metaphysics did very little to advance democracy, science or modern ethics. Since the late 1990s, the most burning issue for the New Confucians has been to select content from the ancient classics which would contribute to the discussion within the emerging civil society. Lin reiterates this claim by saying that the Neo-Confucians should no longer be asking “how to move from *neisheng* to *waiwang*” but instead, “how to adjust *neisheng* to fit *waiwang*”. According to Lin, ‘Old Confucianism’ was rooted in an autocratic, shamanistic clan society. ‘New Confucianism’ should be rooted in deal-based, open civil society, but the Contemporary Neo-Confucians never got further than groping their way towards such a society; they recognized the need to modernize but did not know how.²³⁷

Lin has coined the term *Hou Xin Rujia* (后新儒家), ‘Post-New Confucianism’, to describe his blueprint for ‘critical Confucianism’, which would lead Confucianism away from “excessive emphasis on inner moral cultivation at the expense of practice”. In contrast to ‘old’ and ‘new’ Confucianism, ‘Post-New Confucianism’ is to be rooted in a post-modern, free ‘human society’. ‘Post-New Confucianism’ should not follow ‘New Confucianism’ but must replace it. ‘Post-New Confucianism’ must purge away shamanism, autocracy and other vestiges of ‘old Confucianism’. Lin also deplores the continuing influence of “imperial-style Confucianism”. He draws a structural parallel between autocratic monarchy and the kind of ‘subjective’

²³⁵ Li 1999, 185.

²³⁶ Makeham 2008, 71, 171.

²³⁷ Lin Anwu 2005, “Foreword”.

Confucianism as promoted by Wang Yangming and Mou Zongsan. According to Lin, innate moral knowledge (*liangzhi*) and autocracy are similarly absolute. “Innate moral consciousness gives priority to the ontological mind ... as the highest absolute, whereas autocracy gives priority to the ruler.”²³⁸

Lin not only criticizes Mou Zongsan’s Contemporary New Confucianism but also the Confucianism promoted by the Nationalists in Taiwan. He calls it “a new form of imperial style Confucianism”. Lin states that in Taiwan, the self-proclaimed masters of the ‘true political tradition’ (*zhengtong*, 政统) declared themselves to be the protectors of the ‘true cultural tradition’ (*daotong*), although in theory, *daotong* should override *zhengtong*, and ‘cultural China’ should take precedence over ‘political China’ and ‘economic China’. This is a point where many of the New Confucians are in agreement: the goal of reviving Confucianism is to build a new moral and cultural basis for political rule, in Mainland China and Taiwan alike.²³⁹

Lin proposes broader engagement with different Confucian thinkers and other schools of thought, including Marxism, liberalism and even scholastic philosophy.²⁴⁰ He states that the primary concept of genuine Confucianism is neither ‘heart-mind’ (*xin*) nor ‘rational principle’ (*li*) but *qi* (气). *Qi* is a notoriously vague concept and may refer, for instance, to energy, ether, or spirit. It is a central concept in Taoism. For Zhu Xi, *qi* meant the life-force of the observable world (*xing’erxia*, 形而下), which could obscure the perfect *li*.²⁴¹ Lin defines *qi* as something that interconnects the metaphysical and the physical. “[T]he concept of *qi* emphasizes the genuine interactivity and resonance in the overall interconnectedness of history and society.”²⁴² Lin’s definition seems related to the one by Zhu Xi and

²³⁸ Makeham 2008, 42, 171, 173–176. See also Lin Anwu 2005, “Foreword”. Makeham sees a parallel between Lin’s wish to eliminate magic and Weber’s Entzäuberung; “Weber regarded the Protestant Reformation as having played a key role in paving the way for modernity through its criticism of magic” (Makeham 2008, 175).

²³⁹ Makeham 2008, 202–203.

²⁴⁰ *Ibid.*, 171.

²⁴¹ According to Zhu Xi, a person could clear his/her *qi* through self-cultivation (see Lodén 2006, 115).

²⁴² Makeham 2008, 181.

is probably aimed at reducing the role of the heart-mind as a subject of the metaphysical realm.²⁴³

John Makeham remains sceptical of the ‘Post-New Confucianism’. He questions whether Lin Anwu really has been able to create anything “genuinely innovative, creative and influential”. Other critics have similarly written off Lin Anwu’s thinking as “shouting slogans” against Mou Zongsan without the ability to match the latter as a thinker.²⁴⁴

The third and fourth generation New Confucians in Mainland China

Researchers have identified several groups which may be labelled as representatives of the 3rd or 4th generation active on the Mainland. Among these are the followers of Mou Zongsan, dubbed ‘apologetics’ by Jesús Solé-Farràs (2008). Their most prominent figure is Luo Yijun (罗义俊, b. 1944, Shanghai Academy of Social Sciences), a major supporter of the 1958 Manifesto. From 1986, he was a member of the Fang Keli-led research project. In 1992, he publicly identified himself as a Confucian instead of just a researcher of Confucianism. Luo has called for Confucianism to be revived in order for it to replace Marxism as the ideology which would guide China in the 21st century. He continues to frequently publish articles related to Confucianism. Zheng Jiadong also seems to regard himself as a successor to Mou Zongsan’s tradition, although he is critical towards ‘subjective’ Confucianism and calls for combining metaphysically oriented Confucian learning with real-life oriented action (see below).²⁴⁵

A second group are the ‘militants’, spearheaded by Jiang Qing (江庆, b. 1953, formerly at the Shenzhen Administrative College), who is

²⁴³ Lin’s ‘Critical Confucianism’ bears a close resemblance to ‘Critical Buddhism’ by Hakayama Noriaki (see Hakayama 1997). See Lin Anwu 2005, “Foreword”. – Zeng Guofan also regarded *qi* as the central concept because he felt that neither *li* (the rational principle) nor *xin* (the heart-mind) were sufficiently ‘Chinese’ but could be found in Christianity as well (Feng Youlan 1995, 80).

²⁴⁴ Makeham 2008, 347, fn 29.

²⁴⁵ Solé-Farràs 2008, 153–154, 252–254. Ai 2008, 37. Bresciani 2001, 440.

perhaps currently the best known of the Mainland New Confucians besides Luo Yijun. Jiang is critical towards Mou Zongsan's tradition, yet cannot be seen as a follower of Xu Fuguan. Instead, he is calling for the establishment of Confucianism as a religion (*Rujiao*, 儒教) so that it would replace Marxism-Leninism as the 'national doctrine' (*guojiao*, 国教). Influenced by Du Weiming, Jiang Qing also believes that Confucianism is one of the world religions.²⁴⁶ I will discuss Jiang's thinking further in Chapter IV.

There are proponents of the Confucian religion representing a younger generation, too. One of these is Professor Chen Ming (陈明, b. 1962, Chinese Academy of Social Sciences, Institute of World Religions), who rather pragmatically courts 'New Authoritarianism'—a political theory which became popular in China in the late 1980s and which emphasized the importance of a strong central government for economic development—in order to rally support for his cause.²⁴⁷ Another is Professor Peng Guoxiang (彭国翔, b. 1969) at the Philosophy Department of Tsinghua University. He has published several articles discussing Wang Yangming's thought and translated many works by Du Weiming into Chinese. Peng believes that by using a broad definition of religion, Confucianism can be classified as a religion. Unlike Jiang Qing, Peng doesn't believe that Confucianism can offer answers to all worldly matters, but must be considered a religious system of values only.²⁴⁸ Kang Xiaoguang (康晓光, b. 1963), Professor of Regional Economics and Politics at Renmin University, has also authored several essays advocating the establishment of Confucianism as the state religion.

Then there are the 'Socialists', an instrumentalist grouping more Marxist than Confucian. Their leading figure is Fang Keli, who is very critical towards both Luo Yijun and Jiang Qing. This is the kind of New Confucianism that the Communist Party wishes to utilize in order to build up the Socialist Harmonious Society and to strengthen its legitimacy.²⁴⁹ While this group may prove influential in the governmental efforts to build Traditional Learning, it is in my opinion

²⁴⁶ Makeham 2008, 263. Bresciani 2001, 429.

²⁴⁷ Makeham 2008, 197.

²⁴⁸ Peng Guoxiang 2002. Wang Zhicheng 2009.

²⁴⁹ See Ai 2008, 38–40.

doubtful whether Marxism–Leninism–Maoism can really be merged with Confucianism.

There has also been a grouping labelled the ‘liberals’, who promote gradual political reform which would lead to a ‘Chinese Confucian democracy’. They argued that while Marxism is not compatible with China’s modernization, Western liberal democracy is also not suited to China’s cultural tradition. Confucianism, on the other hand, would be compatible with democracy.²⁵⁰ The liberals were linked with the Chinese Cultural College (*Zhongguo wenhua shuyuan*, 中国文化书院), established in 1984 by several prominent scholars at Peking University, including Feng Youlan and Liang Shuming.

While the Chinese Cultural College still exists, it seems to have become an organ supporting the Socialist Confucians. One of the founders who is still alive, Tang Yijie (汤一介, b. 1927), maintains that Taoism, Confucianism and Buddhism are all equally important for China’s national revival, and his recently published thoughts seem to chime well with the promotion of Traditional Learning and building the Socialist Harmonious Society.²⁵¹

The preceding overview, together with an outline of the genealogical tree of Confucianism since the Han dynasty, is presented in the form of a diagram in **Figure 4**.²⁵²

Because Zheng Jiadong, once the ‘grandmaster’ of Chinese Confucians, appears to have been seriously discredited by a scandal,²⁵³ the question remains, is there anyone in Mainland China (besides Luo Yijun, who is already past retirement age) who is able and willing to carry on Mou Zongsan’s line? As Fang Keli has noted, New Confucians in

²⁵⁰ Ai 2008, 40–41.

²⁵¹ See e.g. Tang Yijie 2006a and 2006b.

²⁵² Cf. Bresciani’s chart of the New Confucian movement (Bresciani 2001, 35).

²⁵³ Zheng Jiadong was detained in the summer of 2005 on charges of having smuggled six women into the United States. One year later he was convicted and sentenced to prison for 2½ years. On the internet, the affair stirred up heated discussion on whether it had anything to do with the nature of Confucianism, either with the hollowness of Confucian virtue or, more apologetically, the unrealistic expectations placed on Confucian self-cultivation (e.g. “Zheng Jiadong shijian yu Xiandai Xin Rujia de kunjing”, by Guyun, in *Nanfang Zhoumo*, 15 July 2005, available at <http://news.sina.com.cn/c/2005-07-15/11487232558.shtml>, accessed 19 May 2010). Cf. Qian Mansu’s view that the idea of anyone being able to become a sage is both unhelpful and unrealistic, in Chapter II, “The failure of the revolutionaries to uproot Confucianism”.

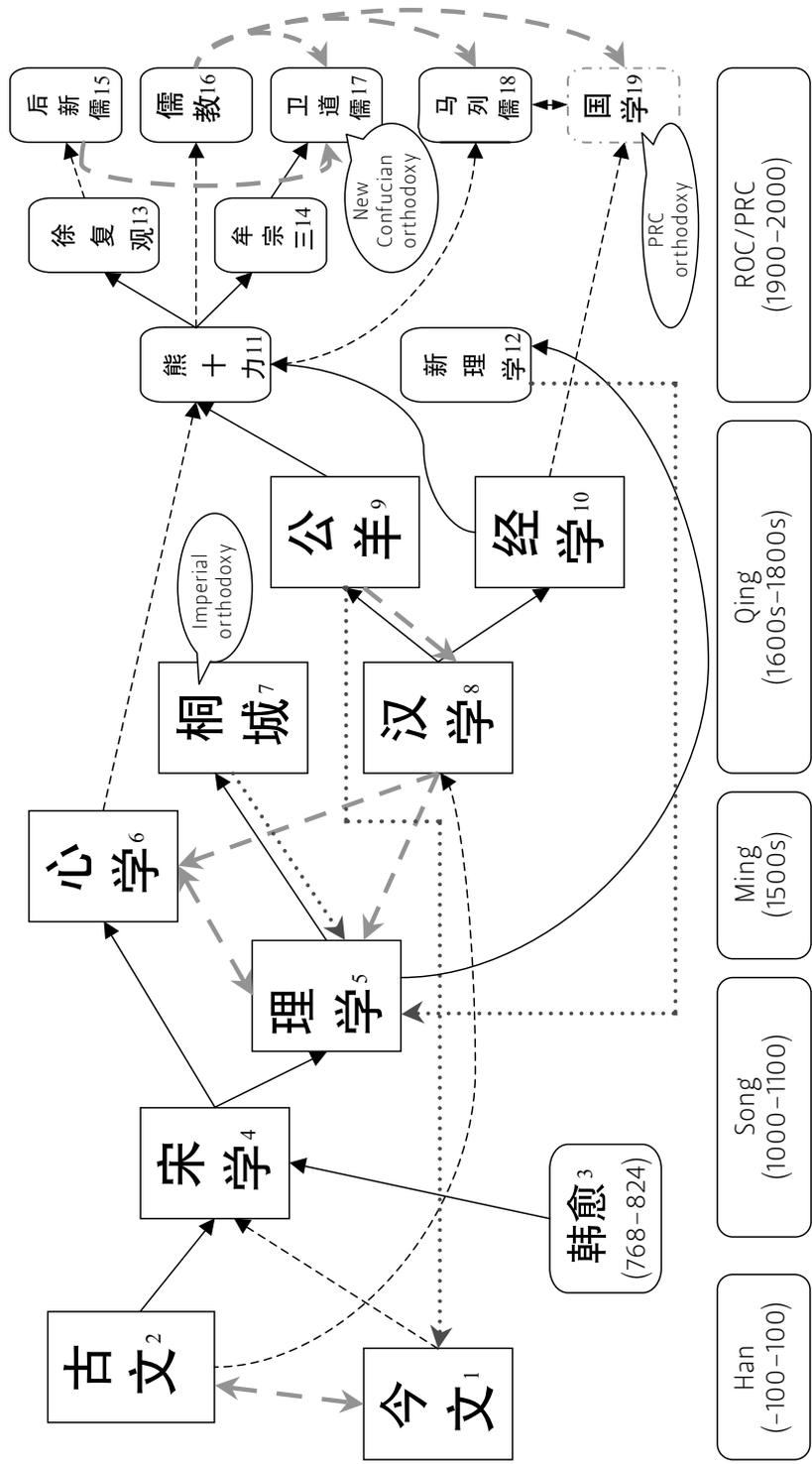


Figure 4. Outline of the genealogical tree of Confucianism since the Han dynasty

KEY

- direct influence or descentence
- indirect or weak influence
- → opposition
- ◀..... identification
- | - - - - | non -Confucian school

From left to right, top to bottom:

- | | |
|---------------------------|---|
| Han dynasty | 1 New Text (今文) School
2 Ancient Text (古文) School |
| Tang dynasty | 3 Han Yu (韩愈) |
| Song and Ming dynasty | 4 Song Learning (宋学) i.e. Neo-Confucianism (新儒学)
5 Cheng-Zhu Neo-Confucianism (理学)
6 Lu-Wang Neo-Confucianism (心学) |
| Qing dynasty | 7 Tongcheng (桐城) School i.e. School of Song Learning
8 School of Han Learning (汉学 or 新汉学) i.e. Empirical Research (考证) School
9 Gongyang (公羊) School i.e. New Text (今文) School
10 'Modern' exegetical studies (经学) |
| 1st gen of New Confucians | 11 Xiong Shili (熊十力)
12 New Neo-Confucianism (新理学) by Feng Youlan (冯友兰) |
| 2nd gen of New Confucians | 13 Xu Fuguan (徐复观)
14 Mou Zongsan (牟宗三) |
| 3rd and 4th gen | 15 Post-New Confucianism (后新儒学) by Lin Anwu (林安梧)
16 Confucian religion (儒教) by Jiang Qing (江庆) et al.
17 Apologetic Confucianism (卫道儒)
18 Marxist-Leninist 'Confucianism' (马列儒)
19 Traditional Learning (国学) |

Mainland China are at least “theoretically speaking” outlawed because their stand negates historical materialism, dialectical materialism and hence Marxism.²⁵⁴ Furthermore, ‘militant’ Confucianism is clearly too extremist to lead anywhere, ‘socialist’ Confucianism is Confucian in name only, and ‘liberal’ Confucianism appears to have faded away, making the future of New Confucianism seem bleak.

We may see from the above that the relation between the Outer Kingliness (*waiwang*) and the Inner Sageliness (*neisheng*) is central to defining the proper lineage of Confucianism (*daotong*). Another issue is the difference between Confucianism (*Rujia*, 儒家) and Confucian learning (*Ruxue*, 儒学). Zheng Jiadong predicts that handling the

²⁵⁴ Guo 2004, 75.

division between the intellectual, ontological *Ruxue*, based on knowledge, and the *Rujia* based on moral action which results from personal cultivation, will be crucial for the future development of Confucianism.²⁵⁵

Zheng is in favour of combining *Rujia* and *Ruxue* into “learning concerned with life”: Academic systems of knowledge (*xuetong*, 学统) can function as the premise for subjective experience or the *Rujia* spirit of practice and social concern.²⁵⁶ When referring to the “spirit of practice” Zheng quotes Fan Zhongyan’s essay entitled “Inscription at Yueyang Tower” about the sages of the past: “They must have said, let us be the first to concern ourselves with the concerns of All-Under-Heaven and the last to enjoy the joys of All-Under-Heaven! Alas! Who am I to follow when such men are among us no more.”²⁵⁷

Zheng also proposes a “broad definition of *daotong*”. According to him, a broadly defined *daotong* is not only a genealogical model but a kind of “cultural consciousness”. As Makeham concludes, Zheng’s “broad *daotong*” leads into cultural nationalism where the *Rujia* are both the inheritors and participants of the Chinese culture.²⁵⁸

Just who it is that represents the newest generation of New Confucians on the Mainland is a question for further research. Some proponents of the Confucian religion were mentioned above, but at this stage I am unable to assess how representative their views are among the ‘younger’ Confucians. I would argue that for a possible fifth generation (consisting of people born mainly in the 1970s) to be successful, it would have to follow either the ‘critical Confucianism’ sketched by Lin Anwu or the ‘learning concerned with life’ approach outlined by Zheng Jiadong. The other avenues seem to be dead ends.

Or perhaps the answer lies in abandoning the genealogical thinking and returning to the roots. Discussion about the origins and the ‘true’ nature of Confucianism has indeed begun, following some recent archaeological finds.

²⁵⁵ Makeham 2008, 142.

²⁵⁶ Ibid., 143, 165. This reminds us of the thought of Gu Yanwu, who promoted the study of everything, not just the Classics, and “argued that broad studies should be combined with a sense of shame over the remaining injustices in the world” (Lodén 2006, 133; see Gu Yanwu 2000, 175–178).

²⁵⁷ For a translation of the whole essay in Finnish, see Kallio 2008, 31–33.

²⁵⁸ Zheng Jiadong 1994, 190. Makeham 2008, 140–141, 157–160.

The early lineage of Confucianism

Archaeology and linguistics have come to the aid of those who wish to make new interpretations about Traditional Learning and Confucianism. The unearthing of several previously unknown texts, preserved on bamboo slips, from a tomb in a village called Guodian in Hubei Province in the early 1990s, has been particularly inspirational. Several of the texts have been classified as belonging to the Confucian school of thought.²⁵⁹ The Guodian tomb dates back to approximately 300 BCE, and it is possible that the unearthed texts were produced just decades after Confucius's death in 479 BCE, and thus predate Mencius, the first major developer of Confucianism after Confucius himself.

As discussed above, defining the *daotong* is of great importance to the self-legitimization of the contemporary Confucians. The Guodian find is naturally relevant to the discussion concerning the early lineage of Confucianism. The established view on the early lineage was formulated by the Song dynasty Neo Confucians, especially Zhu Xi. According to this view, Confucius passed his school of thought on to Zengzi (曾子, a disciple of Confucius), who then passed it on to Zisi (子思, allegedly a grandson of Confucius), who then passed it on to Mencius. The younger contemporary of Mencius, Xunzi, is depicted as a heterodox, and he thus falls outside the lineage.²⁶⁰

²⁵⁹ Kenneth W. Holloway cautions against classifying the Guodian texts according to the different schools, i.e. Confucianism and Taoism, and notes that the division into different schools could be artificial and may not have taken place before the Han dynasty (Holloway 2009, 6, 41).

²⁶⁰ Makeham 2008, 222–223. Han Yu, the first to outline a Confucian genealogy, said of Xunzi that he “picked up pieces of Confucius’s learning but failed to grasp its essence” (“Yuan Dao”, translated in Kallio 2007, 112–119). The discussion on Xunzi revolves around his view on Heaven and nature, *Tian* and *xing*. Both Mencius and the *Doctrine of the Mean* represent the view that “one’s nature is destined by Heaven”; therefore, Heaven and Man are one. In contrast, Xunzi did not see Heaven as the ruler of one’s destiny; to use modern concepts, he equated Heaven with impersonal natural forces which are separate from Man. Xunzi considered man’s ‘nature’ (*xing*, 性) to include just the ‘animal instincts’, to use modern analogies again. More important in Xunzi’s view was man’s ‘artifice’ (*wei*, 伪), what one has learned and how one controls one’s instincts. Xunzi also emphasized ‘propriety’ (*li*) and ‘justice’ (*yi*), in contrast to Mencius, who put the highest value on ‘benevolence’ (*ren*) (Robins 2007; Goldin 2000).

From early on, the lineage has been called into question. In particular, the role of Xunzi has been viewed in various ways. For instance, Sun Fu (孙复, 992–1057) maintained that Confucius revived the Confucian Way after the disintegration of the Zhou Dynasty, Mencius revived it when the death of Confucius had given way to the heresies of Yang Zhu and Mozi, and Xunzi revived it after it had been disrupted by the chaos of the Warring States period. “Mencius often spoke about humaneness (*ren*) and seldom about propriety (*li*), while Xunzi often spoke about propriety (*li*) and seldom about humaneness (*ren*)”, noted Kang Youwei. Both poles, *ren* and *li*, are necessary for the Kingly Way (*Wang Dao*, 王道), Sun Fu and others have argued, while the orthodoxy has sided with *ren*.²⁶¹

The orthodox view on the lineage has been endorsed by the majority of contemporary New Confucians, including Mou Zongsan.²⁶² Why the New Confucians have stressed Mencian ‘idealism’ and the subjective Inner Sageliness stems from embarrassment over the fact that Confucius himself never reached an official position, let alone the throne (though his later biographies often contain such fabrications).²⁶³ Mencius set out to create an image of Confucius as a Sage whose real achievements had to do with his spiritual growth. As Professor Qin Hui (秦晖) from Tsinghua University has pointed out, Confucians prior to the Han dynasty looked towards the legendary Three Emperors and the Kings of Zhou as their idols and it was not until the Song dynasty that Confucius’s *Analects* attained the highest position in the Confucian canon.²⁶⁴ Confucius himself said that he “didn’t create but only transmitted”.

Traditionally, the authoritative texts had included the so-called Five Classics: the *Classic of Changes*, the *Classic of History*, the *Classic of*

²⁶¹ Liang Tao 2009.

²⁶² This discussion is still very much alive. The new translation of the *Analects* by Brooks & Brooks (1998) aims to prove that *ren* is the central concept in original Confucianism.

²⁶³ See Waley 1989 13–14, and Li Ling 2009, 13.

²⁶⁴ Qin Hui 2009. The *Analects* was studied as early as the Han dynasty, when it was first regarded as Confucius’s own commentary on the Five Classics and later as one of the Seven Classics (i.e. the Five Classics, the *Analects* and the *Classic of Filial Piety*). Schoolchildren typically studied the *Analects* as an elementary textbook prior to embarking on the more difficult Five Classics (Gardner 2003, 7–8).

Poetry, the *Spring and Autumn Annals* and the *Book of Rites*²⁶⁵ (originally, there had been six classics, but the *Classic of Music* had been lost). It was thanks to Zhu Xi that the Five Classics were superseded in importance by the Four Books: the *Analects*, the *Mencius*, the *Great Learning* and the *Doctrine of the Mean*. Zhu Xi maintained that “the Four Books revealed Confucian truths more clearly and effectively and should thus take precedence over all other writings in the canon”. In 1313, the Four Books, with Zhu Xi’s commentary, were declared the basis of the civil service examinations.²⁶⁶ It was only the Gongyang School and later the New Confucians who put Confucius on a pedestal as the originator of Confucianism.

The Guodian texts have been keenly exploited to either defend, modify or attack the established view on the early lineage of Confucianism. One group uses the Guodian find to support the existence of the Zisi–Mencius connection and thus the find is taken as further proof of the established, and New Confucian, view. It is perhaps no accident that one of the major proponents of overseas New Confucianism, Du Weiming, is also one of the most eager researchers into the Guodian texts.²⁶⁷

Another group uses the Guodian find to promote the idea of the antiquity of the Chinese culture. This is related to the state-sponsored Three Dynasties (Xia–Shang–Zhou) Chronology Project, which was one of the key projects under the Ninth Five-Year Plan in 1996–2000. The project aimed at establishing a scientific foundation for the traditional belief that the Chinese civilization really is 5,000 years old with an unbroken, homogeneous dynastic history (see “A case in point: The *Zhonghua* Culture Symbolic City” above). This belief is heavily contested by the scientific consensus, according to which

²⁶⁵ According to Torbjörn Lodén, the original, pre-Qin *Book of Rites* (*Lijing*) was probably very different from the later version (*Liji*), compiled during the Han dynasty (Lodén 2006, 10).

²⁶⁶ Gardner 2003, 2–3. All in all, the Confucian canon during the Song dynasty comprised thirteen books: the Five Classics, the Four Books, and certain other works. The other works were the *Classic of Filial Piety*; three accompanying works to the *Spring and Autumn Annals*, *Zuo zhuan*, *Guliangzhuan* and *Gongyangzhuan*; the *Erya* dictionary; and two books on rituals in addition to the *Book of Rites*, *Zhouli* and *Yili*. Because *Zuo zhuan* was considered part of the *Spring and Autumn Annals* and because the *Great Learning* and the *Doctrine of the Mean* were parts of the *Book of Rites*, the total number came to thirteen.

²⁶⁷ Makeham 2008, 216–233, and Liang Tao 2009.

the Zhou dynasty (its latter part, 841–256 BCE) certainly is historical but there is no archaeological evidence for the existence of the Xia dynasty (allegedly 2070–1600 BCE). In contrast, the Chronology Project presents Xia as a powerful state formation.²⁶⁸

Yet another group maintains that the Guodian find exposes flaws in the established lineage by showing that Xunzi’s thinking was important for the development of later Confucianism alongside Mencius’s thinking. This seems plausible indeed, and Paul Rakita Goldin argues convincingly that many aspects of Xunzi’s thinking are present, at least in a raw form, in the Confucian texts found in Guodian.²⁶⁹

Nevertheless, even this interpretation of the Guodian texts isn’t value-free. Some, like Li Zehou, may favour this approach because it counters the New Confucian view of the lineage.²⁷⁰ There is also a connection to the ideal of the Socialist Harmonious Society. According to Yuan Tengfei (袁腾飞), the author of an extremely popular textbook on Chinese history, a harmonious society needs both *ren* and *li*. *Ren* means that people care for each other. For the ruler to love his people and to be loved by them requires *li*: people need to act according to their position and be content with their lot.²⁷¹

A case in point: Reinterpretations of Confucius

The Guodian texts provide material for purposes other than simply analyzing the lineage of Confucianism. Many expect that it is possible to find traces of original Confucianism in the texts because they are so very old. The studies on the nature of ‘true’ Confucianism bear direct relevance to the debate on the role of tradition in today’s China, but

²⁶⁸ See Makeham 2008, 231.

²⁶⁹ Goldin 2000. Most significantly, Goldin shows that the interpretation of *xing* or ‘nature’ in both the Guodian texts and in Xunzi’s thought (and possibly Gaozi’s) differs from the view presented by Mencius. Mencius believed that it is the inherent goodness of the *xing* of human beings that distinguishes them from animals. According to the Guodian texts, all members of a certain species are born with the same, morally indeterminate *xing* and people can make themselves good through self-cultivation.

²⁷⁰ See Makeham 2008, 225.

²⁷¹ Yuan Tengfei 2009, 31–32. This resembles the way Yu Dan presents Confucianism in her recent bestseller, *Confucius from the Heart* (see below).

it is not always easy to decipher what the pundits are actually saying amid all the linguistic and philosophical jargon.

Two views, both originating from the Chinese Academy of Social Sciences, serve as good examples of the heated debate related to the Guodian texts. Approaching the subject from different angles, and arriving at somewhat different conclusions, both nevertheless praise the texts as a source of a new understanding of ‘original’ Confucianism. Both underline the ‘revolutionary’ and ‘political’ spirit of early Confucianism.

Liang Tao (梁涛, Chinese Academy of Social Sciences, History Institute) wishes to bolster his original view of the democratic spirit of Confucius, and with that aim in mind he—arguably rather freely—attributes a great many Guodian texts to Zisi, whom he takes to be the grandson of Confucius.²⁷²

According to Liang Tao, early Confucianism had two mutually complementary trends. Mencius promoted “benevolent (*ren*) rule” and Zisi stood for “All-Under-Heaven is one community” (*Tianxia wei gong*, 天下为公). Mencius also taught that the people are the basis of the state, and Liang maintains that Zisi meant that political power belongs to all people. Thus, argues Liang, the two trends together form an indigenous, Chinese basis for democracy.²⁷³ Liang deplores the fact that only the Mencian trend has continued while the rest became diluted into the principle that an unworthy ruler

²⁷² Makeham 2008, 225. Liang Tao 2009. Some texts found in Guodian are widely believed to be parts of the now lost *Zisizi*, the collected writings of Zisi. A received text in the *Book of Rites* entitled “Ziyi”, which is traditionally attributed to Zisi, has its counterpart among the Guodian texts. One of the Guodian texts is entitled “Duke Mu of Lu questions Zisi” and is unquestionably related to Zisi. (See Henricks 2000, 5.) In contrast, Paul Rakita Goldin (2000, 115) strongly criticizes “the emerging trend to associate the Guodian manuscripts with Zisi” and argues, instead, that the manuscripts show a connection to Xunzi. Brooks & Brooks (1998, 285, 287) challenge the view that Zisi was a grandson of Confucius.

²⁷³ Holloway (2009, 22) suggests that (at least some) Guodian texts describe an ideal society “where individual egalitarianism is balanced with communitarian connectedness to create a harmony between the priorities of the majority and minority groups in our society”. Holloway’s discussion of the Guodian texts is interesting, but his analysis is marred by the fact that he translates the key concepts following the customary, Confucian tradition. Especially problematic are *ren* and *de*: translating them as ‘humaneness, humanity’ and ‘virtue’, respectively, seems forced.

must abdicate.²⁷⁴ In Liang’s words, ‘common world’ became just ‘one family’; and in a ‘common world’, all are equal, whereas in ‘one family’ somebody is the head of the family. Furthermore, the exegetical studies (*jingxue*) of the Ancient Text School and the New Text School petrified Confucianism as they helped to cement the Confucian canon, based on the Mencian tradition. They also replaced the focus on propriety and justice with the cultivation of one’s inner *ren*, and replaced politics with mere academic study.²⁷⁵

Liang Tao discusses the meaning of the *ren* concept in the light of the Guodian texts. In the latter, *ren* is most often written with a variant of the graph 忋 (which is an ancient form of the standard graph 仁). The Guodian variant has 身 as the phonetic component, meaning ‘self’. Liang Tao sees this as a concrete example of Confucius’s interpretation of *ren*: originally, the concept not only implied ‘loving one’s fellow men’, as Mencius claimed, but also ‘overcoming one’s selfish desires’ and ‘cultivating oneself’.²⁷⁶ Furthermore, *ren* as ‘loving one’s fellow men’ is not entirely different from loving oneself, because in Confucius’s thinking, *ren* starts from the relations to one’s blood relatives and is therefore related to the concept of filial, or brotherly, piety.²⁷⁷

²⁷⁴ Holloway (2009, 17–20) claims that the Guodian texts, and “Tang Yu zhi dao” in particular, endorse neither abdication (in favour of a virtuous and capable person, instead of one’s son) nor hereditary succession, but promote a balanced view between the two. My own interpretation of “Tang Yu zhi dao” is quite different, and I read the text as an instrumentalist endorsement of abdication only (Cf. Pines 2009, 63–65).

²⁷⁵ Liang Tao 2009. This resembles the lamentation of Gu Yanwu, expressed in his *Rizhilu* (chapter “Fuzi zhi yan xing yu Tiandao”): “People today do not study the content of the Six Classics ... and talk idly about ‘clearing one’s mind in order to find one’s nature’ and use this to replace the practical studies oriented at self-cultivation and the administration of people.” (不习六艺之文 ... 以明心见性之空言代修己治人之实学。)

²⁷⁶ Liang Tao refers to the phrase 克己 from the *Analects* XII.1. As Edward Slingerland (2003, 125) points out, the meaning and translation of the passage have been debated continuously over the centuries. My translation here, ‘overcoming one’s selfish desires’, is based on the context of Liang Tao’s essay. See fn. 109.

²⁷⁷ Liang Tao 2008. I would be ready to carry this logic further. In early dictionaries, *ren* is said to mean *qin* (亲). As a verb, *qin* means ‘to feel close to someone, to love (one’s close ones)’, and as a noun, ‘a close person, kinsman, relative’. It is conceivable, in my opinion, that *ren* originally denoted ‘kinship’ and acquired the meaning of general ‘humaneness’ as a later extension.

Liang Tao proposes that contemporary Confucians should learn from the Song dynasty Neo-Confucians who absorbed Taoist and Buddhist influences and were therefore able to make new, innovative interpretations. Similarly, contemporary Confucians should integrate Western philosophy and science into Confucianism. The basis of Confucianism is to be found by studying the Guodian texts. Such a new synthesis would enable China to continue the kind of enlightenment that emerged during the Ming and Qing dynasties and to rejuvenate her democratic tradition. According to Liang, the Confucians should discard the old Four Books (see “The early lineage of Confucianism” above) and replace them with a set of New Four Books, namely the *Analects*, the *Mencius*, the *Book of Rites* and the *Xunzi*.²⁷⁸

All in all, Liang sees it as the contemporary Confucians’ duty to transform the old, *neisheng* oriented Confucianism into a new *waiwang* orientation. In other words, studying the classics must be replaced by political action.²⁷⁹ Although Liang doesn’t directly say what kind of action would be needed, reading between the lines suggests that he is using the Guodian texts to find arguments in favour of reforming the current political system.

Jiang Guanghui (姜广辉, Chinese Academy of Social Sciences, Institute of History of Chinese Thought) thinks initially along the same lines as Liang Tao, but arrives at a different conclusion. The Confucian lineage, established by Zhu Xi, passed from Confucius to Zengzi and from him to Zisi and Mencius. Kang Youwei already held a different view and saw Zisi as the follower of Ziyou (子有, a disciple of Confucius) instead. According to Jiang, the Ziyou School of early Confucianism promoted the right of the people to overthrow a bad ruler, and the central slogans in the school were ‘Great Community’, ‘Modest Welfare’ (*Xiaokang*) and ‘All-Under-Heaven is one community’. It was the most rebellious of the early schools.²⁸⁰

²⁷⁸ The *Great Learning* and the *Doctrine of the Mean* are actually two of the 49 chapters in the *Book of Rites*. Traditionally, these two chapters were attributed to Zisi, and they were elevated to a special position by Zhu Xi during the Song dynasty. Liang Tao (2009) calls for a new edition of the *Book of Rites* which should be based on the Guodian texts.

²⁷⁹ Liang Tao 2009.

²⁸⁰ This and the following paragraphs are based on Jiang Guanghui 2007.

Jiang further identifies two other early Confucian schools, those of Zixia (子夏, also a disciple of Confucius) and Zengzi. According to Jiang, the Zixia school concentrated on the study of the ancient ways and scriptures. Unlike the rebellious Ziyou school, they sought cooperation with the rulers. The exegetical studies (*jingxue*) continued the heritage of the Zixia school, claims Jiang.

Jiang further describes the Zengzi school as concentrating on the concept of filial piety, both in the family and in a wider context. Any behaviour which brings shame on one's parents is to be regarded as non-filial. In addition, the Zengzi school is also responsible for making the discussion on metaphysics, the *yin* and the *yang*, part of later Confucianism.

Jiang believes that the Confucian texts unearthed in Guodian belong to the school of Ziyou and his follower Zisi.²⁸¹ According to Jiang, the Ziyou-Zisi-Mencius school has the following special characteristics. First, their ideal for society was the Great Community. Second, their political ideal was abdication in favour of the able. Third, they emphasized man's free will.

Traditionally, the ideal of the Great Community was believed to have been a reality during the reigns of the Five Emperors, especially Yao and Shun. The ideal rulers of the Three Dynasties, Xia, Shang and Zhou, supposedly reigned during an era of Modest Welfare. According to Jiang, the era preceding the Xia dynasty was indeed a time of primitive communism when "All-Under-Heaven was one community" and the people "held not only their own blood relatives as their relatives and their real sons as their sons".²⁸²

Jiang quotes Kang Youwei, who stated that Confucius himself advocated abdicating the throne in favour of the able. According to Jiang, this view is proven right by the Guodian text "Tang Yu zhi Dao". Jiang further states that particularly through the writings of Mencius, the succession of the able became a political ideal with clear democratic overtones. In addition, both Mencius and Xunzi proposed that the people have the right to overthrow an unjust ruler. This interpretation is somewhat different from the view of Liang Tao.

²⁸¹ Jiang makes particular reference to the texts "Tang Yu zhi Dao", "Xing zi ming chu", "Lu Mu Gong wen Zisi", "Zi yi" and "Wu xing". He also notes that some scholars attribute two Guodian texts directly to Confucius himself, namely "Zun de yi" and "Qiong da yi shi".

²⁸² 不独亲其亲子其子, a quotation from the *Book of Rites*, "Liyun".

According to Jiang, the Ziyou school believed that man has free will. This idea is advanced by the concept of ‘sensibility’ or ‘sympathy’ (*qing*, 情). This concept is in contrast with *xing* (性) or man’s ‘nature’, which is innate. According to the Guodian text “Xing zi ming chu”, man’s nature gives birth to man’s sensibilities (to the feelings of others) and sympathy (for one’s fellow humans), which in turn are the starting point for the Way (of society). According to Jiang, *qing* is a yardstick against which to measure right and wrong, and it is formed in a person through the process of socialization and education.²⁸³

In conclusion, Jiang Guanghui argues that the Guodian texts force us to re-evaluate the lineage of Confucianism. Very boldly, Jiang states that both Zhu Xi and Wang Yangming were wrong in their interpretations of Confucianism. Neither of them knew the real tradition which has now been revealed by the Guodian texts. Jiang criticizes Mou Zongsan and the New Confucians for making the Wang Yangming school the core of their view on the true lineage.

Jiang himself gives credit to the Qing dynasty Confucians Huang Zongxi (黄宗羲, 1610–95), Dai Zhen (戴震, 1724–77) and Kang Youwei. According to Jiang, they restored to Confucianism the original ideas of respecting the interests of the people, seeing people as active subjects, and rebelliousness, and their thinking bore a resemblance to the European Enlightenment. The general ethos of Jiang’s analysis suggests that rather than extolling the virtues of the enlightenment, he wishes to prove the compatibility of Confucianism with communism.

It is my own humble view, based on my very limited reading of the Guodian texts, that the differences between the Mencian tradition and the Guodian corpus are more striking than the similarities.²⁸⁴ Therefore, I would be inclined to see the Guodian find as proof of the existence of different branches of (what later became known as) Confucianism during the 4th century BC.

²⁸³ The concept of *qing* is difficult to translate here. In later Confucianism, it refers to ‘feelings’ or ‘emotions’, but it is my understanding (and seemingly also Jiang Guanghui’s) that in the Guodian text “Xing zi ming chu”, *qing* is both more active and conscious than an emotion.

²⁸⁴ I have translated (into Finnish) excerpts from four texts belonging to the Guodian corpus, pending publication.

It also seems plausible that the texts originate from the Jixia Academy, where they were used as reading materials, as has been suggested by Gao Zheng (高正) from the Chinese Academy of Social Sciences.²⁸⁵ Many philosophers of different schools were active in the academy during the years of its existence (from ca. 360 BCE to 284 BCE), including Mencius and Xunzi.

The discussion on the right method of succession, central to the text “Tang Yu zhi dao”, could be related to the events in the state of Qi around the year 386 BCE, when the throne was seized from the ‘rightful heir’ by the ‘able ruler’.²⁸⁶ Thus the Guodian texts would, at least in part, be coloured by political instrumentalism. It is no wonder, then, that interpreting the texts today has become a politicized issue.

²⁸⁵ Gao Zheng 2001.

²⁸⁶ The Tian family assumed the Qi throne formally in 386 BCE, putting an end to a long power struggle. The establishment of the Jixia academy was a means to bolster the family’s legitimacy and power. The academy combined academic freedom with economic security and thus succeeded in enticing many talented men to the service of the state.

Chapter IV

Conclusions

Confucianism in contemporary China

Guo Yingjie, lecturer in Chinese Studies at the Institute for International Studies, University of Technology, Sydney, writes: “Fortunately for the Confucians, both Marxists and liberals have moderated their antitraditional stance in varying degrees in the last decade in contrast to the May Fourth era or the 1980s.” Guo concludes boldly: “As a result, China is witnessing a reformist ethos that finds no parallel since May Fourth.”²⁸⁷

Guo’s conclusion may be an exaggeration but the discussion on the social and political value base is certainly not at a standstill in China. As mentioned in the Introduction to this report, Li Xiangping and Shi Dajian argue that the Confucian revival movement and the efforts by the state to strengthen its legitimacy are interdependent processes. While the Confucian revival movement provides legitimization for national and local authorities, the latter in turn mobilize resources which further enhance the former. Let us assume that Li and Shi are right in their analysis. Then we need to return to the critique of the Confucian revival and its desirability in order to be able to assess the sustainability of the circle of interdependency between the revival of Confucianism and the legitimization of the authorities.

The critique centres on at least three aspects. The first of these is the compatibility of Confucianism with modernization. The second is the relation between Confucianism and the ideal of unity. And the third relates to the complicated issue of the religiousness of Confucianism.

Since the 1980s, some Mainland scholars have claimed that sinicized Marxism is similar to the Confucianism of the Mencius-Lu-Wang lineage. Both Marxism and Confucianism stressed self-cultivation and collectivism. Other uniting elements are the ideal of ‘people as the basis’ (*minben*), the Great Community as the

²⁸⁷ Guo 2004, 89.

ultimate goal, and a dislike of individual benefit.²⁸⁸ At the same time, Confucianism has been seen as a threat to Marxism.

Fang Keli, who led the research project on New Confucianism launched in 1986, has taken a positive attitude towards many Confucian ‘traditional virtues’, such as respect for the aged, harmony and solidarity. Such a stance has laid a positive foundation for New Confucianism in China, but only within strict parameters. Fang has emphasized that Confucianism can only add to the ‘vocabulary’ of the future civilization, not its ‘grammar’.²⁸⁹

Fang Keli has stated that because New Confucianism is mainly a philosophy of life, one could not reach a true understanding of the thought without a sympathetic attitude towards one’s own history and culture. This statement was clearly directed against the anti-Marxist New Confucians in Taiwan and elsewhere outside Mainland China. Fang has also written that in order to nullify the schemes to replace Marxism with Confucianism, one needs to study the New Confucian movement in depth. In Fang’s analysis, New Confucianism is an episode in China’s history which demonstrates an effort to liberate Chinese capitalism from feudalism.²⁹⁰ In effect, Fang rules that New Confucianism is outdated in regard to China’s socialist modernization.

Senior editors in the *People’s Daily*, Ling Zhijun (凌志军) and Ma Licheng (马立诚), explore the discussion on the societal role of Confucianism in their book entitled *Huhan* (呼喊), “Voices”, published in 1999. Ling and Ma give most space to the critical views. They quote several scholars in support of their argument: the New Confucians are wrong in trying to negate the May 4th Movement as an ‘anti-traditionalist’ movement. The New Confucians emphasize the necessity for Inner Sageliness (*neisheng*) as the basis for Outer Kingliness (*waiwang*), but in reality, Outer Kingliness today is a matter of established societal, economic and legal systems and practices.²⁹¹

²⁸⁸ Makeham 2008, 237–238.

²⁸⁹ Ibid., 248, 250–251.

²⁹⁰ Bresciani 2001, 426–427.

²⁹¹ Ling & Ma 2008, 272–273. Ling & Ma aim their criticism especially at a book by Lin Yusheng, *The Crisis of China’s Consciousness: radical antitraditionalism in the May Fourth era* (University of Wisconsin Press, Madison 1979). Li Zehou (1994, 152) also saw reason to criticize the same book.

Li Ling (李零), Professor of Chinese Literature at Peking University, discusses the relevance of Confucius in the modern world in his book *Sangjiagou* (丧家狗, “Stray Dog”, revised edition 2007). The title of the book refers to Li’s desire to present Confucius as a failed sage—a homeless, disdained roamer who did not succeed in getting any ruler to follow his advice—and not the kind of exalted figure popularized in canonized Confucianism. Li reaches a cynical conclusion. Confucius’s utopia was the revitalization of the political system in the early Western Zhou era. This utopia was impossible to attain even in Confucius’s own time. Furthermore, he targeted his message at the scholar-officials, his peers. Confucius had nothing to offer to the common people even originally, and even less after the reforms of Wang Mang (王莽), the founder of the short-lived New Dynasty (9–23), which restricted the scope for non-Confucian religious rites and practices. It was Westerners who recognized in Confucius the Philosopher King they had been looking for. They put Confucianism on a pedestal as one of the great world religions.²⁹²

For centuries, Confucianism was an ideology of scholars who adopted meddling with politics as their mission—a trait which Li Ling calls harmful. Echoing Yu Dan (于丹, b. 1965, f.), the author of a best-selling, trivialized popularization of the thought of Confucius, *Confucius from the Heart* (original *Lunyu xinde*, 论语心得, 2007),²⁹³ Li Ling quotes Confucius who said: “If you are not in government office, do not engage in government.”²⁹⁴ Li Ling translates that into modern parlance as: “Mind your own bloody business.” Li Ling argues that Neo-Confucian ‘innate knowledge’ can be used to guide politics as little as democracy can be used to guide scientific research. This is how politics and science differ, says Li and laments that few contemporary Confucians seem to realize that. Confucius cannot save China, nor can he save the world. We must do that ourselves, concludes Li Ling.²⁹⁵

²⁹² Li Ling 2007, 374–390.

²⁹³ I have briefly presented some criticism targeted at Yu Dan’s book in China in *Kiina sanoin ja kuvin* 4/2009–1/2010 (243), 16–19 (“Yksinkertaisen elämän kaipuu – mitä Mestari Kong sanoisi tänään”).

²⁹⁴ *Analects* VIII.14.

²⁹⁵ Li Ling 2007, 374–390.

As mentioned in Chapter I, there are those who claim that Confucianism stands for ‘pluralist unity’ and others who extol the virtues of decentralization. Neither of these viewpoints is in accordance with the current, communist orthodoxy. Referring especially to the ideas presented by Ge Jianxiong and Yan Jiaqi (see Chapter I), Victoria Tin-bor Hui concludes pessimistically: “Recent developments suggest that [China remains stuck on the age-old model of Legalism with a Confucian façade], and it is difficult to expect younger generations, who have grown up with intensified ‘patriotic education’, to steer China away from the Legalist path.”²⁹⁶

The traditional Marxist view equates unity with progress. For example, Li Zehou maintains that Confucian thought reflected the ideals of a clan society at a time when history was, inevitably, moving towards a system of regional states. Li Zehou describes how the clan states were faltering, rulers of the new regional states were getting richer following the military conquests, and the foundations of the communal communities were crumbling. The old order, where the rulers of the clan states had been vassals of a Son of Heaven, was turning into a battle for supremacy. The importance of Confucius stemmed from the fact that he transmitted the code of propriety (*li*) of the old order to his followers. The code of propriety that Confucius wished to revitalize echoed the original norms of the primitive communities, even though it had already been transformed into rituals serving the interests of the ruling class. For instance, filial piety and respect for the elderly stems from a time when decisions were made ‘democratically’ by a council of elders. The code of propriety of the old order could not compete with the new teachings. Legalism in particular answered the needs of the new order.²⁹⁷

According to Li Zehou, Confucius stood in the ranks of the conservative and backward forces of his time. Confucius promoted the code of propriety that had been in place to protect the personal power of the clan leaders, and stood against the rule based on institutions and law. He favoured the old, communal, economic system and opposed the desire of the rulers to strive for riches. All this shows how Confucius’s teachings reflected the declining destinies of

²⁹⁶ Hui 2008, 63, 65.

²⁹⁷ Li Zehou 2008, 11–16.

the clan leaders, who were being surpassed by the wealthy, concludes Li Zehou.²⁹⁸

From the perspective of historical determinism, Li Zehou's analysis makes sense. Feudalism and capitalism had to be born so that communism, in turn, could enter the stage. The 'primitive unity' of the Zhou rule by the Son of Heaven had to turn into a division of the Warring States so that it, in turn, could turn into the unity of the Qin, glorified by Mao Zedong. Reading differently, we may see that Li Zehou describes the value system of the communal societies as a kind of proto-communism. Thus the teachings of Confucius, reflecting—albeit inadequately—this value system, must be seen as progressive from an ideological point of view. We may perhaps also interpret Li's analysis as a positive appraisal of the 'primitive unity', a *fengjian* system with nominal unity.

However, Li Zehou does not explicitly draw the conclusion that Confucianism actually had progressive elements, although such an implication may be hidden between the lines. This is the problem with those bright thinkers who wish to get their writings published in communist China: it is often next to impossible to decipher their real meaning. On the other hand, these kinds of interpretational problems may simply attest to the flaws in the internal logic of communist historiography.

It is conceivable that a certain religiousness of Confucianism might have its uses. The Communist Party does not want the Chinese population to turn to questionable cults for spiritual inspiration, and any religion may be seen as a rival for loyalty. Therefore, if Confucianism as a non-religion may somehow fulfil the spiritual needs of the people, and even turn people away from religions, it is to be welcomed.²⁹⁹ On the other hand, Confucianism as a 'state-religion' is obviously not desirable.

Professor Liu Dongchao (刘东超) from Beijing Business and Technology University questions whether contemporary China needs Confucianism either as a school of thought or as an ideology.

²⁹⁸ Ibid.

²⁹⁹ We may recall how Han Yu fiercely attacked religions in his essay "Yuan Dao", defending Confucianism. "Let us make proper citizens of their priests and monks, let us burn their books, let us turn their temples into dwellings", he wrote of the followers of Taoism and Buddhism in (ca.) 805. (Translated into Finnish in Kallio 2007, 112–119.)

Liu claims that all nation states have both a leading ideology and several schools of thought; while the former enhances stability and unity, the latter foster intellectual diversity and systemic harmony. Naturally, if the former is too strong, it may suppress the latter, and if the latter gain the upper hand, societal stability and development may be jeopardized. According to Liu, China aims to maintain a balance between the two under the principle of “one pillar with many supporters” (*yi zhu duo fu*, 一主多辅). The ‘one pillar’ ideology is Marxism “with its Chinese fruits”, Deng Xiaoping Theory, the Thought of Three Represents and Scientific Development Worldview. The ‘many supporters’ include Buddhism, Taoism, Christianity and Islam as well as Liberalism, New Leftism and New Confucianism.³⁰⁰

Liu Dongchao opines that due to the moral impoverishment in contemporary China, people who truly acted upon Confucian values would be welcome. Therefore, Confucianism serves a purpose as one of the ‘supporters’. However, Liu does not think that Confucianism could or should rise to the status of a religion. It could not, because Confucian values are too vague, and because it lacks divine and mystical elements which could appeal to modern people. It should not become a religion, particularly not the national religion, because the time is not ripe for replacing China’s current ‘pillar’ ideology.³⁰¹

Somewhat unexpectedly in this context, Liu cites the Taiwan issue as the biggest stumbling block standing in the way of China’s modernization. According to him, the Taiwan issue is especially difficult to solve because of foreign interference and China’s troublesome relations with the United States and Japan. Adding the domestic challenges, caused by the ongoing transition from a traditional society to a modern one, to the international situation makes it too risky for China to make any adjustments to its current ideological basis, Liu argues.³⁰²

Liu concludes that in the future, China’s ‘pillar’ ideology will eventually absorb both modern and ancient as well as Chinese and Western elements. Confucian values, such as the emphasis on ethical government and harmonious society, will thus have a role to play, but

³⁰⁰ Liu Dongchao 2008, 79–81. The Thought of Three Represents is the ideological grand achievement of Jiang Zemin. Interestingly, Liu fails to mention Mao Zedong Thought.

³⁰¹ Ibid. 82–85.

³⁰² Ibid. 83.

China does not need Confucianism to become the dominant ideology. Liu criticizes the proponents of a Confucian religion (he especially mentions Kang Xiaoguang) for being unrealistic and unhistorical. Finally, Liu dismisses their Confucianism as a mere icon, propped up by nothing more than abstract slogans.³⁰³

Fang Keli has been especially hostile towards the interpretation of Confucianism promoted by Jiang Qing. Fang Keli sees Jiang Qing as working for the overseas New Confucians who aim at ‘renurturing’ Confucianism at its place of origin.³⁰⁴ Jiang’s ideas have attracted major international publicity, particularly due to a recent book by Daniel A. Bell (2008), Professor of Political Philosophy at Tsinghua University.

Although Fang Keli links Jiang Qing with the overseas New Confucians, Jiang Qing himself is most critical of the ‘idealist’ Confucianism of the Mou Zongsan lineage. Jiang praises Wang Yangming (who promoted ‘innate knowledge’) highly as the person who elevated Confucianism to its full glory during the Ming dynasty. In contrast, Jiang classifies Zhu Xi’s Confucianism as a mere branch. However, Jiang accuses the (overseas) contemporary New Confucians of over-emphasizing introspection and the individual at the expense of practical orientation and society. Therefore, the contemporary New Confucians have bifurcated from the main tradition into another branch.³⁰⁵

Jiang Qing’s views on Confucianism are dogmatic, if not fundamentalist. He depicts Confucianism not as one among many schools of thought during the Warring States period, but as the one and only school embodying China’s cultural heritage. According to Jiang, the other schools, such as Taoism, Mohism and Legalism, were the creations of their founders. In contrast, Confucius did not create anything but transmitted the age-old traditions of the ancient sage kings. Therefore, Confucianism alone can be said to be the legitimate representative of the Chinese culture.³⁰⁶ Among others, Qin Hui has

³⁰³ Ibid. 84–86.

³⁰⁴ Makeham 2008, 78.

³⁰⁵ Jiang Qing 2009, 52–53.

³⁰⁶ Ibid., 19–20.

criticized this view of differentiating between Confucius and the other heads of schools.³⁰⁷

The most controversial of Jiang's theses were originally published overseas and in Taiwan, accessible to the scholarly community on the Mainland but not to the general public. In those articles which have not been published in China, Jiang calls for replacing Marxism-Leninism with Confucianism.

Jiang Qing accuses Marxism-Leninism of being a 'foreign culture' which has stolen the position of a 'national doctrine' (*guojiao*) under the protection of the Communist Party. Yet Marxism-Leninism has proved to be "incapable of solving China's problems ... [and] has delayed the course of modernization." As a result, there is a 'crisis of belief' in China, and Confucianism should therefore be allowed to "replace Marxism-Leninism and revive its orthodox historical position... ." ³⁰⁸ In effect, "Confucianism naturally should replace Marxism and Leninism as 'the national religion' and recover its position in history." ³⁰⁹ It needs to be pointed out that there is no difference between a 'national doctrine' and a 'national religion' in the Chinese language; both are called *guojiao*. Jiang believes that the Confucian religion actually existed in remote antiquity even before the time of Confucius. ³¹⁰

Jiang Qing has also called for reforming the Communist Party of China into a Confucian Party of China, and has sketched a tri-cameral national legislature whereby the uppermost house would consist of Confucian scholars, versed in the ancient classics. Jiang claims that the legitimacy of that house comes from "sacred sources in Heaven". As such, it would act as a counterbalance to the democratic power of the people, which is needed because the uneducated masses do not always know what is best for the country. ³¹¹

In an apparent attempt to curb the more extreme ideas by Jiang Qing, a collection of essays discussing his thought was published in Mainland China in 2008. The book carries the subtitle "Dialogue with Jiang Qing" and, interestingly, also Jiang Qing's replies to each of the

³⁰⁷ Qin Hui 2009.

³⁰⁸ Translated and quoted in Makeham 2008, 262.

³⁰⁹ Translated and quoted in Song Xianlin 2003, 94.

³¹⁰ Wang Zhicheng 2009.

³¹¹ Bell 2008, 180-181, 186, 190-191.

essays are included in the book. The editor of the book, Professor Fan Ruiping (范瑞平) from the City University of Hong Kong, calls Jiang Qing a “big-shot Confucian” in his “Introduction” and says that Jiang’s fame is one reason why it is necessary to engage in dialogue with him.³¹² Nevertheless, the general tone of the book is mostly critical towards Jiang’s thinking.

China Daily published a commentary in 2006 entitled “Confucianism will never be a religion”. According to the article, Confucianism has never been a religion and, in any case, religion as a state power should never be allowed in China. The article claims that the goal of Jiang Qing’s “fallacy” is to “restore the feudal order”. Furthermore, to call Jiang’s theory ‘fundamentalist Confucianism’ is mistaken and “disgraces the name of Confucius”.³¹³

Interestingly, it seems that there have been no attempts to limit the freedom of Jiang Qing by the authorities. Jiang is operating a Confucian ‘retreat centre’ near Guiyang where he meets his visitors dressed in traditional *hanfu* clothing and discusses classical texts with them. Perhaps Jiang is simply deemed harmless in his extravagant extremism. Certainly, the fundamentalist character of his thought does not make it easy to make his ideas the starting point for meaningful discussion. Even Daniel A. Bell is cautious and quotes Qin Hui in his comments: “[S]etting up Confucianism as the national doctrine seems to imply treating opposition to Confucianism as heresy. ... I am very much against it.”³¹⁴

Let us return once more to Li Zehou. In a book article from 1994, Li questions the need for any *guojiao*. Li wrote that he believed there was a need to break the prevailing (and traditional Confucian) oneness of politics and ideology (*zheng jiao heyi*, 政教合一) in order to overcome China’s moral impoverishment and spiritual crisis. Li Zehou claimed that the enthusiasm with which the Chinese intelligentsia in 1919, as well as in 1989, called for National Salvation, patriotism, science or

³¹² Fan Ruiping 2008, 2. The book contains one essay (in Chinese) by Daniel A. Bell which is also included (in English) in Appendix 2 of Bell’s aforementioned book. In his essay, Bell gently questions the rationale behind the tri-cameral national legislature envisioned by Jiang.

³¹³ “Confucianism will never be a religion”, by Huang Qing, in *China Daily*, 6 January 2006, available at http://www.chinadaily.com.cn/english/doc/2006-01/06/content_509753.htm. Accessed 8 Feb 2010.

³¹⁴ Bell 2008, 188–189.

democracy reflects a quasi-religious ferment which stems from the unrealistic tendency to see politics as ethics and ethics as politics.³¹⁵

In that same article, Li Zehou commented on the discussion on the role of Confucianism in tackling the aforementioned challenges and stated that while he did not agree with those who fully negated Confucian values, nor did he believe that metaphysical New Confucianism could promote the development of democratization in China. Instead, the Chinese should rely on the tradition of rationality and pragmatism (or ‘rational reason’) and separate morality from politics.³¹⁶ Here Li demonstrates a wholly materialistic, Marxist worldview. Translated into modern language, it would imply that economic development must not be hindered by anything. This indeed seems to be the prevailing ideology in today’s China; and not only there but in many other parts of the world as well.

Finally, a word about the potential foreign policy relevance of Traditional Learning. It has been suggested that a Chinese, possibly Confucian, international relations theory will inevitably emerge as a consequence of China’s growing role on the world stage on the one hand and the rise of traditional values in China on the other. It is easy to imagine that both the concept of harmony and the Confucian utopia, the Great Community (*Datong*), which ideally refers to the whole world, should occupy a central position in the theory.³¹⁷ Hypothetically, nations truly influenced by such a theory would essentially manifest peaceful foreign policy behaviour.

In the official rhetoric, China’s growing strength is indeed dubbed a “peaceful rise” and China’s ambitions are depicted as a “harmonious world”.³¹⁸ However, China will hardly be content with being a mere

³¹⁵ Li Zehou 1994, 155. After taking up residence in the United States, Li has said that while Confucianism is not a real religion, the Chinese Communist Party is a “church”, clothed in political organization (“Modernization and the Confucian World”, address at the Colorado College’s 125th Anniversary Symposium on Cultures in the 21st Century; Conflicts and Convergences, delivered on 5 Feb 1999, at <http://www.coloradocollege.edu/academics/Anniversary/Transcripts/LiTXT.htm>, accessed 29 Oct 2010).

³¹⁶ Li Zehou 1994, 152, 155, 158.

³¹⁷ See e.g. Bell 2008, 19–37; and Cheung 2008.

³¹⁸ The phrase “peaceful rise” (*heping jueqi*, 和平崛起) was coined by Zheng Bijian (郑必坚) in 2003, then Vice-President of the Central Party School. Note that both the words ‘peace’ and ‘harmony’ contain the character *he*.

paper tiger, let alone a Confucian paper kitten, and its real political goals are never entirely devoid of rhetoric. Therefore, the values of Traditional Learning are likely to be reflected in China's foreign policy behaviour as well, and we may expect to continue hearing calls for a balanced and fair world order and even see some related actions on the part of China in the near future. It may be a sign of the nation's ambitions that the Central Committee of the Chinese Communist Party has named the promotion of cultural development and the raising of China's cultural soft power as one of the priorities in the 12th Five-Year Plan for 2011–2015.³¹⁹

The projections of China's soft power are being keenly monitored by other powers, albeit often with the expectation that soft power is going to give way to hard power when China has the potential to do so. It is probably not overly cynical to assume that China will endeavour to explain its own projections of power outside its borders as being conducive to world harmony and any attempts to interfere with its internal affairs as just the opposite. Nevertheless, this is all guesswork. Further research and time are needed in order to assess the impact of Traditional Learning on China's foreign policy rhetoric and behaviour. By providing the reader with the background necessary for understanding the discussion related to the role of tradition in its Chinese context, this study hopefully makes it easier even for China-watchers not well-versed in Sinology to make intelligent assumptions on the basis of the signals being emitted from this intriguing part of the world.

Concluding conclusions

The Chinese Communist Party is attempting to anchor its legitimacy in history and simultaneously patch the chinks in the Party's rusting spiritual-ideological armour with values adopted from traditional schools of thought. "Socialism with Chinese characteristics" seems to be gradually turning into "Chinese tradition with socialist characteristics". The revival of Confucianism, a central component

³¹⁹ "Shouquan fabu: Zhong-Gong Zhongyang guanyu zhiding guomin jingji he shehui fazhan dishi'er ge wu nian guihua de jianyi", *Xinhua*, 27 Oct 2010, at http://news.xinhuanet.com/politics/2010-10/27/c_12708501.htm. Accessed 29 Oct 2010.

in the artificial concoction called Traditional Learning, provides legitimization for the Party through such values as harmony and loyalty to the state, and thus the Party in turn mobilizes resources which enhance the revitalization of Confucianism.

The Party will not allow any outsiders to participate in the revamping of its ideological doctrine, and it is certain that unity will remain the principal dogma. It is also likely that at least in the short term the “socialist characteristics” will remain strong, and the outcome will simply be touched-up communism.

However, in the increasingly plural society in China today, the Party is not able to prevent the common people from engaging in a discussion on the role and nature of tradition on their own, although it will make every effort to keep the discussion within safe parameters. Even that will be difficult, as shown by the examples presented in this paper, and other bold persuasions by ‘public intellectuals’ and opinion leaders.

While there are ongoing processes which foster the revitalization of Confucianism, or at least some external manifestations of it, in view of the political realities in the People’s Republic of China, it seems clear that there will be no room for Confucianism as the ‘grammar’ of Chinese society in the foreseeable future. Furthermore, New Confucianism faces difficulties in becoming just part of the ‘vocabulary’, too.

In terms of the latter, the New Confucians largely have themselves to blame. Particularly on account of Mou Zongsan, who presented Confucianism as ‘moral metaphysics’, Confucianism has been sent into tangential orbit and has become distanced from society. Another problem is the obsession with *daotong*, the true genealogy. As Umberto Bressiani notes, it has been said that the New Confucians’ faith in *daotong* “seals them off from any creative development and from a true involvement in the reality of social political developments.”³²⁰ According to Li Zehou, “this sealed-off attitude is completely at odds with the open-minded attitude of democracy.”³²¹

I would argue that in order to survive, the New Confucian movement has to break away from dead ends. One possibility would be to follow the ‘learning concerned with life’ approach outlined by Zheng Jiadong. According to him, *Rujia* has the spirit of practice and

³²⁰ Bressiani 2001, 481–482.

³²¹ Quoted and translated in Bressiani 2001, 482.

social concern. Another avenue might be something like the ‘critical Confucianism’ sketched by Lin Anwu. He calls for adjusting *neisheng* to fit *waiwang*, and maintains that “New” Confucianism should be rooted in deal-based, open civil society. Both Zheng’s and Lin’s ideas were briefly introduced in Chapter III.

Furthermore, the New Confucian movement has to cast off the shadow of Marxism. On the one hand, it doesn’t help the New Confucians if they are accused of subversion. “What hinders [an alliance between the Party-state and Confucianism] is not Party-state opposition to Confucianism but the Confucians’ unwavering opposition to Marxism”, claims Guo Yingjie.³²² On the other hand, introducing Marxism-Leninism-Maoism into Confucianism (as Fang Keli and others have been attempting to do) would undoubtedly turn it into something unrecognizable: Party dogmas and personal enlightenment don’t mix. Therefore, the new generation of New Confucians will have to be free from both the urge to support Marxism and the need to totally negate it.

In all fairness, it has to be said that democracy is arguably as foreign to Confucianism as communism. If we take individual liberty and equality to be the basis of democracy, then values such as filiality or the emphasis on everyone keeping to one’s role—either as a ruler, a minister, a father or a son—would have to be removed from Confucianism in order to make it compatible with democracy.³²³

On the other hand, Li Chenyang (李晨阳) from Central Washington University believes that the original Confucianism includes elements that could complement democracy. Referring to the overemphasis on liberty in America in comparison to equality and particularly to fraternity, he writes: “For instance, given that democracy emphasizes individual liberty, the Confucian emphasis on the family would make a better society.”³²⁴

The new generation will undoubtedly also benefit from the newly started search for the roots and the ‘true’ nature of Confucianism. And although no one truth will in all probability ever be found, a return to the roots is valuable also from a wider perspective. If Traditional Learning (*Guoxue*) is to become the ideological foundation of China’s Soft

³²² Guo 2004, 90.

³²³ See Li 1999, 188–189.

³²⁴ Li 1999, 187–188.

Power, not to mention a national doctrine (*guojiao*), it needs to be based on a non-falsified understanding of history in order to remain healthy.

One has to acknowledge that China was a unified, ‘Chinese-ruled’ state for only two-fifths of the imperial era. Even this refers only to ‘China Proper’, the historical core region of the Han-Chinese nationality. The unity of ‘greater China’ is a relatively modern phenomenon which has been achieved mainly through coercion. China’s past as a ‘culturalist’ union which has “always” encompassed the minority areas of the present-day People’s Republic is a historiographic fabrication.

Culturalism as a historiographic fabrication is but another example of giving political necessities a Confucian façade. After all, culturalism may be seen as inherently Confucian. A culturalistic China was a permanent ‘value regime’ that existed as an idealistic super-structure over the multiplicity of states during periods of division. The ‘values’ were those of the ancient sage kings whose teaching Confucius then ‘transmitted’ to posterity. Culturalism as such may, nevertheless, be a positive force. It is perhaps not entirely out of the question that culturalism could provide a potential foundation for the establishment of a new, ‘social contract-based’ unity in China.

Similarly, the ancient, arguably Confucian ideal of regional rule (*fengjian*) could contribute to solving those present challenges which are due to the supremacy of the myth of unity. When Lin Anwu states that ‘cultural China’ should take precedence over ‘political China’ and ‘economic China’, it is closely related to the ideas of such proponents of regionalism and pluralism as Ge Jianxiong and Xiao Jiansheng, introduced in Chapter I.

So it might transpire that the root-searching resulting in new insights into history and the origins of Confucianism may help in finding the right building blocks for a new moral and cultural basis for Chinese society, irrespective of what the Party is doing. If the role of the Party were to diminish, Traditional Learning or Confucianism might even take the place of the communist ideology. At least that seems to be what some dissidents are hoping for. But then the question arises, does China need an ideology?

Today, China has a national ideology in the form of the ideology of the Communist Party. We may call this China’s *guojiao*, which translates either as ‘national doctrine’ or ‘national religion’; in fact, it is China’s ‘political religion’. It can be argued that whatever China’s

guojiao consists of in the future, it is in the nature of political religion that it will be inherently coercive and totalitarian. Thus, if we are to believe in the inherently pluralist nature of ‘true’ Confucianism, it will not be good for either China or Confucianism to replace Chinese communism with Confucianism.

Instead, if we are to believe in the overall desirability of pluralism, voluntarism and individualism, China would benefit from making its national ideology more like a ‘civil religion’, and the promoters of Confucianism would benefit from presenting Confucianism as something different from a *guojiao*.

History has demonstrated that confining Confucianism to the straitjacket of doctrine would make it just another tool for Saving the Nation. Having statues of Confucius erected here and there does not make China Confucian.

Fortunately, new conceptions of original Confucianism are emerging, suggesting that Confucius may become presented increasingly as a herald of enlightenment. As noted at the end of Chapter III, such interpretations have come even from a very influential, pro-establishment, academic institution. If such a Confucius were allowed to take up the position of the ‘patron saint’ of Traditional Learning, Confucianism would not only be freed from dogma and revived as a living thought-process again, the vitality of the debate related to tradition and history would also be given a major boost.

It is a promising sign that the debate related to tradition and history has so far been rather open. Hopefully, the debate will continue in a true public-spirited manner and will not turn into a nasty game of king of the hill.

In 1525, the prefect of Yuezhou had a library built and said to Wang Yangming: “When the scriptures have been put in order, the commoners will awaken, and when they awaken, they will overcome their evil or wrong devices.” The prefect then asked Wang to compose an inscription for the library. Wang wrote: “Who arrogantly talks only of himself and competes in splitting hairs and, hiding his shallowness and cunningness, tries to become the king of the hill at the expense of others, and who still claims to be a follower of the scriptures, becomes guilty of raping the scriptures! ... Little wonder nobody understands what it means to revere the scriptures anymore.”³²⁵

³²⁵ From “Inscription at Pavilion for Revering the Scriptures”, by Wang Yangming. Translated into Finnish in Kallio 2008, 165–170.

Glossary of Chinese terms

- ben* (本), root, basis
bentu (本土), Chinese (countrymen), ‘China Proper’
bo’ai (博爱), fraternal love, universal love
buzu jiheti (部族集合体), tribal collective
da Hanzu zhuyi (大汉族主义), Han chauvinism
Da yitong (大一统), the Grand Unity
dangdai Xin Rujia (当代新儒家), contemporary Neo-Confucianism, Contemporary New Confucianism
daotong (道统), lineage of the (Confucian) Way, true cultural tradition
Datong (大同), Great Community, Universal Commonwealth
de (德), virtue
ding (鼎), ceremonial tripod
Fajia (法家), Legalism, School of Law
fengjian (封建), divided enoffment, regional rule
gongfu (功夫), correct method
gonggong zhishifenzi (公共知识分子), public intellectual
guojiao (国教), national doctrine, national religion
Guoxue (国学), Traditional Learning, National Learning
guwen (古文), ancient texts, ancient style
hanbenwei (汉本位), Hanishness
hanfu (汉服), traditional Han clothing
he (和), harmony
heping jueqi (和平崛起), peaceful rise
hexie (和谐), harmony
Hou Xin Rujia (后新儒家), Post-New Confucianism
Huaxia (华夏), population of ‘China Proper’ (in the pre-imperial era)
Huaxia wenhua niudai gongcheng (华夏文化纽带工程), *Huaxia* Cultural Links Project
jian’ai (兼爱), reciprocal love, universal love
jing shi zhi yong (经世致用), ancient learning applied to modern society, statecraft
jingxue (经学), exegetical studies
jinwen (今文), new texts
jiu guo (救国), Saving the Nation, National Salvation
kaozheng (考证), empirical, evidential (research, learning)
ke di (客帝), foreign emperors
li (理), rational principle
li (礼), propriety, rites

liang zhi (良知), innate knowledge
lijiao (礼教), religion of rites
min (民), people, commoners
minben (民本), people as the basis
ming (命), destiny
minzhu (民主), people as the masters, democracy
neisheng (内圣), Inner Sageliness
qi (气), energy, ether, spirit
qimeng (启蒙), enlightenment
qin (亲), to love, kinsman
qing (情), feeling, sympathy
ren (仁), fraternity, humaneness
ren (忒), kinship, fraternity
Ru (儒), Confucian (scholar)
Rujia (儒家), Confucianism
Rujiao (儒教), Confucian religion
Ruxue (儒学), Confucian learning
san gang (三纲), Three Cardinal Leads, Three Bonds
suzhi (素质), quality
ti (体), body, essence
Tian ren heyi (天人合一), harmony between man and nature
Tianxia (天下), All-Under-Heaven
Tianxia wei gong (天下为公), All-Under-Heaven is one community
waiwang (外王), Outer Kingliness
Wang Dao (王道), Kingly Way
wei (伪), artifice
wu chang (五常), Five Constants
xiandai Xin Ruxue (现代新儒学), modern New Confucian learning, Contemporary
 New Confucianism
xiandai/dangdai Xin Ruxue/Rujia (现代/当代新儒学/儒家), Contemporary New
 Confucianism
xiao (孝), filiality
Xiaokang (小康), Modest Welfare, moderately prosperous society
xin (心), mind, heart, heart-mind
Xin Lixue (新理学), New (rationalistic) Neo-Confucianism
Xin Ruxue (新儒学), Neo-Confucianism
xing'ershang (形而上), above form, metaphysics
xing'erxia (形而下), observable world
xuetong (学统), system of knowledge, true academic tradition

yi (义), justice
Yi (夷), barbarians
yi zhu duo fu (一主多辅), one pillar with many supporters
yizu (异族), foreign race, non-Chinese
yong (用), practical usefulness
zheng jiao heyi (政教合一), oneness of politics and ideology
zhengtong (政统), true political tradition
zhengtong (正统), proper succession, legitimacy, orthodoxy
Zhongguo wenhua shuyuan (中国文化书院), Chinese Cultural College
Zhonghua (中华), China, Chinese
Zhonghua minzu (中华民族), Chinese nation
Zhonghua wenhua biao zhi cheng, (中华文化标志城), *Zhonghua* Culture Symbolic City
Zhongxia (中夏), (population of) ‘China Proper’ (in the pre-imperial era)
zhuzi (诸子), the Masters of all the traditional schools of thought

Index of Chinese names

Cheng Yi 83, 84, 92

Chen Ming 100

Deng Xiaoping 54, 62, 120

Du Weiming 91, 96, 100, 107

Fang Keli 91, 92, 99, 100, 101, 116, 121, 127

Fan Ruiping 123

Fan Zhongyan 64, 104

Fei Xiaotong 38

Feng Youlan 53, 91, 93, 94, 99, 101, 103

Gao Zheng 114

Ge Jianxiong 22, 24, 25, 26, 27, 29, 30, 41, 42, 46, 69, 70, 118, 128

Gu Yanwu 23, 85, 88, 89, 104, 110

Han Yu 37, 83, 103, 105, 119

He Yafei 66

Hu Jintao 62, 63, 67, 68

Hu Yaobang 56

Jiang Guanghui 111, 113

Jiang Qing 99, 100, 103, 121, 122, 123

Jiang Rong 35, 36

Jiang Zemin 56, 57, 67, 120

Kang Xiaoguang 100, 121

Kang Youwei 50, 51, 72, 87, 88, 92, 106, 111, 112, 113

Liang Qichao 31, 60, 92

Liang Shuming 52, 53, 54, 91, 93, 101

Liang Tao 94, 95, 106, 107, 109, 110, 111, 112

Li Ling 72, 106, 117

Lin Anwu 42, 43, 90, 97, 98, 99, 103, 104, 127, 128

Ling Zhijun 116

Liu Dongchao 30, 119, 120

Liu Shuxian 93, 94, 96, 97

Li Xiangping 10, 13, 60, 61, 115
Li Zehou 71, 72, 78, 108, 116, 118, 119, 123, 124, 126
Lü Jiamin 35
Lu Jiuyuan 84, 92
Luo Guojie 55, 77
Luo Yijun 99, 100, 101

Ma Licheng 116
Mao Peiqi 58, 59
Mao Zedong 32, 34, 50, 51, 52, 55, 71, 89, 93, 119, 120
Ma Rong 24, 32, 33
Mou Zongsan 84, 94, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 103, 106, 113, 121, 126

Ouyang Xiu 20

Peng Guoxiang 100

Qian Mansu 51, 101
Qian Mu 93
Qin Hui 91, 106, 121, 122, 123

Shi Dajian 10, 13, 60, 61, 115
Sima Guang 19, 20
Sun Fu 106

Tang Junyi 94
Tang Yijie 101
Tan Qixiang 22

Wang Fuzhi 88
Wang Yangming 84, 85, 88, 92, 95, 98, 100, 113, 121, 129

Xiao Jiansheng 43, 44, 128
Xiong Shili 93, 94, 97, 103
Xu Fuguan 94, 96, 97, 100, 103

Yan Jiaqi 42, 43, 118
Yan Jiayan 58
Yuan Tengfei 108

Yu Dan 108, 117

Yu Yingshi 96

Zeng Guofan 89, 90, 99

Zhang Binglin 49, 50, 58, 72, 90

Zhang Junmai 93

Zhao Ziyang 56

Zheng Jiadong 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 99, 101, 103, 104, 126

Zhu Xi 20, 83, 84, 92, 94, 95, 98, 105, 107, 111, 113, 121

List of tables and figures

Table 1. Periods of unity of China Proper under ‘Chinese’ and ‘non-Chinese’ dynasties	27
Figure 1. A bronze <i>ding</i> (鼎) from the late Shang dynasty. Source: Mountain/Wikimedia Commons.	12
Figure 2. China Proper	25
Figure 3. Periods of unity and division of China Proper under ‘Chinese’ and ‘non-Chinese’ dynasties	28
Figure 4. Outline of the genealogical tree of Confucianism since the Han dynasty	102

Sources

Ai, Jiawen 2008. “The Refunctioning of Confucianism: The Mainland Chinese Intellectual Response to Confucianism since the 1980s”. *Issues & Studies* 44, no. 2 (June 2008), 29–78.

Allen, Charlotte 1999. “Confucius and the Scholars.” *The Atlantic Online*, April 1999. At <http://www.theatlantic.com/issues/99apr/9904confucius.htm>. Accessed 10 Aug 2009.

Beck, Mansvelt 1986. “The Fall of Han.” *The Cambridge History of China: Volume I: the Ch'in and Han Empires, 221 B.C –A.D. 220*. Ed. by Denis Twitchett and Michael Loewe. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge.

Bell, Daniel A. 2008. *China's New Confucianism. Politics and Everyday Life in a Changing Society*. Princeton University Press, Princeton, NJ.

Blum, Susan D. & Lionel M. Jensen 2002. “Introduction. Reconsidering the Middle Kingdom”. In Blum & Jensen (2002, ed.). *China Off Center. Mapping the Margins of the Middle Kingdom*. University of Hawai'i Press. Honolulu.

Bo Wen et al. 2004. “Genetic evidence supports demic diffusion of Han culture.” *Nature* 431 (2004), 302–305.

Bresciani, Umberto 2001. *Reinventing Confucianism. The New Confucian Movement*. Taipei Ricci Institute of Chinese Studies, Taipei.

Brooks, E. Bruce & A. Taeko Brooks 1998. *The Original Analects. Sayings of Confucius and His Successors*. Columbia University Press, New York.

Chen Qinan & Zhou Yingxiong (ed.) 1994 (民 83). *Wenhua Zhongguo: Linian yu shijian*. Chongchen Wenhua Shiye Gufen Youxiangongsi, Taipei.

Chiang Kai-shek 1947. *China's Destiny & Chinese Economic Theory. With Notes and Commentary by Philip Jaffe*. Dennis Dobson Ltd., London.

Cheung, Gordon C. K. 2008. "International Relations Theory in Flux in View of China's 'Peaceful Rise'". *Copenhagen Journal of Asian Studies* 26(1), 5–21. Available at <http://rauli.cbs.dk/index.php/cjas/article/view/931/1895>. Accessed 26 Apr 2010.

Chow, Kai-wing 1994a. *The Rise of Confucian Ritualism in Late Imperial China. Ethics, Classics and Lineage Discourse*. Stanford University Press/SMC Publishing, Taipei (1996).

Chow, Kai-wing 1994b. "Discourse, Examination and Local Elite. The Invention of the T'ung-ch'eng School in Ch'ing China." In Elman & Woodside (ed.) 1994, 183–219.

de Bary, WM. Theodore & Richard Lufrano (ed.) 2000. *Sources of Chinese Tradition. From 1600 through the Twentieth Century (vol. 2). Second Edition*. Columbia University Press, New York.

DeFrancis, John 1984. *The Chinese Language: Fact and Fantasy*. University of Hawai'i Press, Honolulu.

Dikötter, Frank 1992. *The Discourse on Race in Modern China*. Stanford University Press, Stanford.

Du Weiming 1993. *Rujia chuantong de xiandai zhuanhua – Du Weiming Xin Ruxue lunzhu jiyao*. Ed. by Yue Hua. Zhongguo Guangbo Dianshi Chubanshe, Beijing.

Elman, Benjamin A. 1991 (民 80). *Classicism, Politics and Kinship. The Ch'ang-chou School of New Text Confucianism in Late Imperial China*. University of California Press/SMC Publishing, Taipei.

Elman, Benjamin A. & Alexander Woodside (ed.) 1994. *Education and Society in Late Imperial China, 1600–1900*. University of California Press/SMC Publishing, Taipei (1996).

Falkenhausen, Lothar von 2006. *Chinese Society in the Age of Confucius (1000–250 BC). The Archeological Evidence*. Cotsen Institute of Archeology, University of California, Los Angeles.

Fan Ruiping (ed.) 2008. *Rujia shehui yu daotong fuxing – yu Jiang Qing duihua*. Huadong Shifan Daxue Chubanshe, Shanghai.

Feng Youlan [Feng Yu-lan] 1974. "A Criticism of Confucius and Self-Criticism of My Past Veneration for Confucius". In *Selected Articles Criticizing Lin Piao and Confucius 1*, Foreign Languages Press, Peking, 88–106.

Feng Youlan 1995. *Zhongguo zhhexueshi xinbian. Diliu ce*. Renmin Chubanshe, Beijing.

Gao Zheng 2001. "Lun Qu Yuan yu Guodian Chu-mu zhushu de guanxi". Available at *Confucius 2000* website, <http://www.confucius2000.com/confucian/qyygdzhsh.htm>. Accessed 19 Feb 2010.

Ge Jianxiong 2008. *Tongyi yu fenlie. Zhongguo lishi de qishi. Zengdingban*. Zhonghua Shuju, Beijing.

Gernet, Jacques 1985. *A History of Chinese Civilization*. Transl. by J. R. Foster. Cambridge University Press, New York.

Goldin, Paul Rakita 2000. "Xunzi in the light of the Guodian manuscripts." *Early China*, 25, 2000, 113–146. Available at http://lucian.uchicago.edu/blogs/earlychina/files/2008/07/ec25_goldin.pdf. Accessed 19 Feb 2010.

Gu Yanwu 2000 (民 89). *Gu Tinglin wenji, xin yi*. Sanmin Shuju, Taibei.

Guo, Yingjie 2004. *Cultural Nationalism in Contemporary China. The search for national identity under reform*. Routledge, London.

Hakayama Noriaki 1997. "Critical Philosophy Versus Topical Philosophy." In *Pruning the Bodhi Tree: The Storm Over Critical Buddhism*, ed. by Jamie Hubbard & Paul L. Swanson, University of Hawai'i Press, Honolulu, 56–80.

Hendricks, Robert G. 2000. *Lao tzu's Tao Te Ching. A Translation of the Startling New Documents Found at Guodian*. Columbia University Press, New York.

Ho, Norman 2009. "Unlikely bedfellows? Confucius, the CCP, and the resurgence of guoxue." *Harvard International Review* Vol. 31 (2), Summer 2009. Available at <http://hir.harvard.edu/index.php?page=article&id=1907>. Accessed 26 Apr 2010.

Holloway, Kenneth W. 2009. *Guodian. The newly discovered seeds of Chinese religious and political philosophy*. Oxford University Press, New York.

Hsiao, Kung-ch'uan 1977. "Legalism and Autocracy in Traditional China". *Shang Yang's Reform and State Control in China*. Ed. by. Yu-ming Li. M. E. Sharpe, White Plains, NY.

Hui, Victoria Tin-bor 2008. "How China Was Ruled". *The American Interest*, Spring (March/April) 2008, 53–65.

Jiang Guanghui 2007. "Guodian Chu-jian yu zaoqi Ruxue." Available at *Lunwen Tianxia lunwenwang* website, <http://www.lunwentianxia.com/products.free.3455418.1/>. Accessed 18 Nov 2009.

Jiang Qing 2009. *Ruxue de shidai jiazhi*. Sichuan Renmin Chubanshe, Chengdu.

Jiang Rong (Lü Jiamin) 2004. *Lang tuteng*. Changjiang Wenyi Chubanshe, Wuhan (Beijing).

Johnston, Alistair Iain 1996. "Cultural Realism and Strategy in Maoist China." In Peter J. Katzenstein (ed.), *The Culture of National Security—Norms and Identity in World Politics*, Columbia University Press, New York, 216–270.

Johnston, Alistair Iain 1998. *Cultural Realism. Strategic Culture and Grand Strategy in Chinese History*. Princeton University Press, Princeton, NJ.

Kallio, Jyrki 1999. "Imperiumin vastaisku? Kulttuurismi versus nationalismi Kiinan ulkopoliitikassa." *Ulkopolitiikka* 3/99, 6–25.

Kallio, Jyrki (ed. & transl.) 2005. *Jadekasvot. Valittuja tarinoita Kiinan muinaisajoilta*. Gaudeamus Helsinki University Press, Helsinki.

Kallio, Jyrki (ed. & transl.) 2007. *Jadelähde. Valittuja kirjoituksia Kiinan keskiajalta*. Gaudeamus Helsinki University Press, Helsinki.

Kallio, Jyrki (ed. & transl.) 2008. *Jadepeili. Valittuja kirjoituksia keisarillisen Kiinan kulta-ajoilta*. Gaudeamus Helsinki University Press, Helsinki.

Kallio, Jyrki 2009. *Confucian education and enlightenment for the masses in the manner of Guwen guan zhi*. Licentiate Thesis, University of Helsinki, Faculty of Arts, Institute for Asian and African Studies. Available as an E-thesis at <http://urn.fi/URN:NBN:fi-fe200906101607>.

Kallio, Jyrki & Mikael Mattlin 2004. "Reinventing 'One China': how to make room for the peaceful coexistence of China and Taiwan." *Asian affairs*, No. 23/2004, 47-58.

Kraft, Herman Joseph S. 2001. "Human Rights, ASEAN and Constructivism: Revisiting the 'Asian Values' Discourse". *Philippine Political Science Journal*, Vol. 22, no. 45 (2001), 33-54. Available at <http://web.kssp.upd.edu.ph/polsci/articles/hernmanppsj.pdf>. Accessed 26 May 2010.

Lary, Diana 1997. "Regions and Nation: The Present Situation in China in Historical Context." *Pacific Affairs*, Vol 70, No. 2 (Summer 1997), 181-194.

Leibold, James 2009. "In Search of Han: Early Twentieth-century Narratives on Chinese Origins and Development." *China Heritage Quarterly*, No. 19, September 2009. Available at the publication's website, http://www.chinaheritagequarterly.org/scholarship.php?searchterm=019_han_studies_leibold.inc&issue=019. Accessed 16 Mar 2010.

Leibold, James 2010a. "The Beijing Olympics and China's Conflicted National Form". *The China Journal*, January 2010, Issue 63, 1-24.

Leibold, James 2010b. "More Than a Category: Han Supremacism on the Chinese Internet". *The China Quarterly* (Vol. 203, 2010), 539-559.

Leibold, James 2010c. "Sheep in Wolves' Clothing? The Book the Han Nationalists Love to Loath." *The China Beat* website, 7 January 2010, at <http://www.thechinabeat.org/?=1301>. Accessed 26 Apr 2010.

Levenson, Joseph R. 1965. *Confucian China and Its Modern Fate: A Trilogy*. University of California Press, Berkeley and Los Angeles.

Li, Cheng 2009. "China's New Think Tanks: Where Officials, Entrepreneurs, and Scholars Interact." *China Leadership Monitor* No. 29.

Li, Chenyang 1999. *The Tao Encounters the West. Explorations in Comparative Philosophy*. State University of New York Press, Albany.

Li Ling 2007. *Sangjiagou. Wo du Lunyu (xiudingban)*. Shanxi Renmin Chubanshe, Taiyuan.

Li Xiangping & Shi Dajian 2009. “Rujiao zhongjian: Hefaxing ziyuan de dongyuan moshi”. In *Rujiao yanjiu*, Vol. 1/2009, ed. by Lu Guolong, Shehui Kexue Wenxian Chubanshe, Beijing, 74–84.

Li Zehou 1994. “Zai tan ‘shiyong lixing’”. In *Yuan Dao*, vol. 1, 152–158.

Li Zehou 2008. *Xinban Zhongguo gudai sixiangshi lun*. Tianjin Shehui Kexueyuan Chubanshe, Tianjin.

Liang Shuming 2008. *Liang Shuming xiansheng jiang Kong-Meng*, Shanghai Sanlin Shudian, Shanghai.

Liang Tao 2008: “Guodian zhujian ‘(shen-xin)’ zi yu Kongzi renxue.” *Zhongguo sixiangshi yanjiu tongxun*, vol. 5, 2008. Available on the publication’s website, http://zgsxs.net.cn/News_View.asp?NewsID=145. Accessed 30 Oct 2009.

Liang Tao 2009. “Huidao Zisi qu – Rujia daotonglun de jiantao yu chonggou”. *Xueshu yanjiu*, 2/2009. Available on the *Confucius 2000* website, <http://www.confucius2000.com/admin/list.asp?id=4101>. Accessed 30 Oct 2009.

Lin Anwu 1994. “Cong ‘danyuan er tongyi’ dao ‘duoyuan er yitong’ – yi ‘Wenhua Zhongguo’ yi gainian wei hexin de lijie yu quanshi”. In Chen & Zhou (ed.) 1994, 51–65.

Lin Anwu 2005. *Rujia lunli yu shehui zhengyi*. Zhongguo Yanshi Chubanshe, Beijing. “Foreword” available on the *Confucius 2000* website, <http://www.confucius2000.com/admin/list.asp?id=2266>. Accessed 19 May 2010.

Ling Zhijun & Ma Licheng 2008. *Huhan. Dangjin Zhongguo de wuzhong shengyin*. Hubei Renmin Chubanshe, Wuhan.

Liu Dongchao 2008. *Zhongguo dangdai Ruxue pipan*. Shehui Kexue Wenxian Chubanshe, Beijing.

Liu Shuxian 2008. *Lun Rujia zhaxue de sange da shidai*. Guizhou Renmin Chubanshe, Guiyang (Beijing).

Lóden, Torbjörn 2006. *Rediscovering Confucianism. A Major Philosophy of Life in East Asia*. Global Oriental, Folkestone, Kent (Manchester).

López, Ian F. Haney 2000. “The Social Construction of Race”. In *Critical Race Theory, The Cutting Edge*, ed. by Richard Delgado and Jean Stefancic, Temple University Press, 163–177.

Luo Guojie 1999. “Zhongguo gudai Rujia sixiang yu zhengzhi tongzhi.” In Zhang Kemin (ed.) 1999.

Ma Rong 2009. “Dangdai Zhongguo minzu wenti de zhengjie yu chulu.” *Lingdao*, No. 26, 2/2009. Available at http://www.usc.cuhk.edu.hk/wk_wzdetails.asp?id=7059. Accessed 7 May 2010.

Makeham, John 2003. “The New *Daotong*.” In Makeham (ed.) 2003, 55–78.

Makeham, John (ed.) 2003. *New Confucianism: A Critical Examination*. Palgrave Macmillan, New York.

Makeham, John 2008. *Lost Soul. “Confucianism” in contemporary Chinese academic discourse*. Harvard–Yenching Institute Monographs 64. Harvard University Asia Center. Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Ma.

Makeham, John 2009. “In Quest of the Authentic Confucius”. *China Heritage Quarterly*, No. 18, June 2009. Available on the publication’s website, http://www.chinaheritagequarterly.org/scholarship.php?searchterm=018_confuciusreview.inc&issue=018. Accessed 17 Nov 2009.

Mao Zedong 1966: *Mao Zedong xuanji disi juan*. Renmin Chubanshe, Beijing.

Mao Zedong 1967. *Mao Zedong xuanji di'er juan*. Renmin Chubanshe, Beijing.

Mao Zedong 1977. *Mao Zedong xuanji diwu juan*. Renmin Chubanshe, Beijing.

Mattlin, Mikael 2001. “Kulttuuri ja etnisyyden politisoituminen”. *Politiikka*, 43:2, 167–176.

Meisner, Maurice 2007: *Mao Zedong: A Political and Intellectual Portrait*. Polity Press, Cambridge (Hong Kong).

Metzger, Thomas A. 1977. *Escape from Predicament: Neo-Confucianism and China's Evolving Political Culture*. Columbia University Press, New York.

Mote, F. W. 2003. *Imperial China 900-1800*. Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Ma.

Mullaney, Thomas S. 2009. "Introducing Critical Han Studies." *China Heritage Quarterly*, No. 19, September 2009. Available on the publication's website, http://www.chinaheritagequarterly.org/scholarship.php?searchterm=019_han_studies.inc&issue=019. Accessed 16 Mar 2010.

Neville, Robert C. 2000. *Boston Confucianism. Portable Tradition in the Late-Modern World*. State University of New York Press.

Nojonen, Matti (ed. & transl.) 2008. *Jymäyttämisen taito. Strategiaoppeja muinaisesta Kiinasta*. Gaudeamus, Helsinki.

Norman Ho 2009. "Unlikely bedfellows? Confucius, the CCP, and the resurgence of guoxue." *Harvard International Review* Vol. 31 (2), Summer 2009. Available on the publication's website, <http://hir.harvard.edu/index.php?page=article&id=1907>. Accessed 26 Apr 2010.

Peng Guoxiang 2002. "Lüeshuo 'Ruxue yu zongjiao' yanjiu de mubiao yu shiye." Available on the *Confucius 2000* website, <http://www.confucius2000.com/confucian/rujiao/lrxyzyjyjdmbysy.htm>. Accessed 10 June 2010.

Pines, Yuri 2002. *Foundations of Confucian Thought. Intellectual Life in the Chunqiu Period, 722-453 B.C.E.* University of Hawai'i Press, Honolulu.

Pines, Yuri 2009. *Envisioning Eternal Empire. Chinese Political Thought of the Warring States Era*. University of Hawai'i Press, Honolulu.

Pye, Lucien 1992. *Spirit of Chinese politics. New Edition*. Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Ma.

Qin Hui 2009. "Lunyu shi zenme chengwei jingdian de?" Web log on 9 July 2009, available at <http://qinhui.blog.sohu.com/120230216.html>. Accessed 22 Sep 2009.

Robins, Dan 2007. "Xunzi." *Stanford Encyclopedia of Philosophy*, at <http://plato.stanford.edu/entries/xunzi>. Accessed 19 Feb 2010.

Salisbury, Harrison E. 1992. *The New Emperors, Mao & Deng: A Dual Biography*. Harper Collins Publishers, Glasgow.

Schmalzer, Sigrid 2008. *The People's Peking Man: Popular Science and Human Identity in Twentieth-Century China*. The University of Chicago Press, Chicago.

Shambaugh, David 2008. *China's Communist Party. Atrophy and Adaptation*. University of California Press, Berkeley, Ca.

Shimada Kenji 1990. *Pioneer of the Chinese Revolution. Zhang Binglin and Confucianism*. Transl. by Joshua A. Fogel. Stanford University Press, Stanford, Ca.

Shisan jing jie du 2008. Wanjian Chuban Gongsi, Luoyang (Beijing).

Shun, Kwong-loi 2002. "Rén 仁 and Li 禮 in the *Analects*." In Bryan W. Van Norden (ed.), *Confucius and the Analects—New Essays*, Oxford University Press, New York 2002, 53–72.

Slingerland, Edward (transl.) 2003. *Confucius Analects. With Selections from Traditional Commentaries*. Hackett Publishing Company, Inc., Indianapolis.

Solé-Farràs, Jesús 2008. "Harmony in Contemporary New Confucianism and in Socialism with Chinese Characteristics." *China Media Research* 4(4), 2008, 14–24.

Song Xianlin 2003. "Reconstructing the Confucian Ideal in 1980s China: The 'Culture Craze' and New Confucianism." In Makeham (ed.) 2003, 81–104.

Song Zhiming 2009. *Xiandai Xin Ruxue de zouxiang*. Beijing Shifan Daxue Chubanshe, Beijing.

Spence, Jonathan D. 2001. *Treason by the Book*, Penguin Books 2001.

Spence, Jonathan D. 2007. *Return to the Dragon Mountain. Memories of a Late Ming Man*. Viking, New York.

Tang Yijie 2006a. "Wenhua zijie yu wenti yishi." Available at the *People.com.cn* website, <http://theory.people.com.cn/GB/49167/4950876.html#>. Accessed 24 May 2010.

Tang Yijie 2006b. “Zai jingji quanqiu hua xingshi xia de Zhonghua wenhua dingwei.” Available on the website of the Center of Cross-Cultural Studies, Peking University, <http://www.transcultures.org/data/detail.php?id=180>. Accessed 24 May 2010.

Waley, Arthur (transl.) 1989. *The Analects of Confucius*. Translated and Annotated by Arthur Waley. Vintage Books, New York.

Wang Meng 2010. “Cong redu ‘Dizi gui’ shuoqi”. *Renmin ribao (Haiwai ban)*, 12 Jan 2010, 1.

Wang, Zheng 2008. “National Humiliation, History Education, and the Politics of Historical Memory: Patriotic Education Campaign in China.” *International Studies Quarterly* (2008) 52, 783–806.

Wang Zhicheng 2009. “Zou xiang Ruxing shidai.” *Rujiao yanjiu*, vol. 1, 2009. Available in the author’s web log, blog.tianya.cn/blogger/post_show.asp?BlogID=1745969&PostID=17439844&idWriter=0&Key=0. Accessed 10 June 2010.

Xiao Jiansheng 2007. *Zhongguo wenming de fansi*. Zhongguo Shehui Kexueyuan Chubanshe, Beijing.

Yan Jiaqi 1992. *Lianbang Zhongguo gouxiang*, Minbao chubanshe, Hong Kong.

Yuan Dao, vol. 1, 1994. Ed. by the *Yuan Dao* editorial board. Zhongguo Shehui Kexueyuan Chubanshe, Beijing.

Yuan Tengfei 2009. *Lishi shi shenme wanyir 2: Yuan Tengfei shuo Zhongguo lishi xia*. Huashan Wenyi Chubanshe, Shijiazhuang.

Zhang Haiyang 1997. “Wrestling with the Connotation of Chinese ‘Minzu’”. *Economic and Political Weekly*, 26 July 1997, PE74–PE84.

Zhang Kemin (ed.) 1999. *Zhong-wai lishi wenti ba ren tan*. Zhong-Gong Zhongyang Dangxiao Chubanshe, Beijing.

Zhang Min 2007. “Dressed like a Chinese—A Study of the ‘National Costume’ Debate in China.” *Perspectives: China and the World*, Vol. 8, No. 4, Winter 2007, 157–177.

Zhang Zhirong 2006. *Zhongguo bianjiang yu minzu wenti. Dangdai Zhongguo de tiaozhan jiqi lishi youlai*. Beijing Daxue Chubanshe, Beijing.

Zhao Jiansheng 2007. *Zhongguo wenming de fansi*. Zhongguo Shehui Kexueyuan Chubanshe, Beijing.

Zheng Jiadong 1994. “Dangdai Xin Rujia de daotonglun”. In *Yuan Dao*, vol 1, 159–191.

Zhongguo lishi dituji, diyice 1996. Chief editor Tan Qixiang. Sponsored by the Chinese Academy of Social Sciences. Zhongguo Ditu Chubanshe, Beijing (Hebei).

4

Toward a Harmonious World? Emerging Thinking on a Chinese International Relations Model

Jyrki KALLIO

Introduction

The 18th congress of the Communist Party of China (CPC), held in November 2012, provided China-watchers with valuable material to assess China's policy lines in the coming years. The most awaited outcome was the lineup of China's highest leadership, the Standing Committee of the CPC Politburo. Its new composition is especially notable by the seniority of its members. Perhaps as many as five of its seven members have to retire by the next party congress in 2017.¹ The new Standing Committee is also

1. See e.g. "Shadow of former president looms over China's new leaders," November 16, 2012, <http://edition.cnn.com/2012/11/15/world/asia/china-leadership-reaction-cheng-li/index.html> (accessed on December 19, 2012); "China names conservative, older leadership," Reuters, November 15, 2012, www.reuters.com/article/2012/11/15/us-china-congress-idUSBRE8AD1GF20121115 (accessed on December 14, 2012).

widely characterized as conservative by the pundits.² The composition, based on seniority and conservatism, seems to signal an increasing emphasis on maintaining status quo and stability. This, in turn, may be interpreted as a sign of growing insecurity within the CPC in regard to its ability to maintain its position in the face of growing challenges, rising from economic uncertainty, corruption, and deficiencies in the rule of law.

The CPC is also challenged by the lack of a credible ideological basis. Li Xiangping and Shi Dajian argue that the legitimacy of the Chinese government relies on something more than economic growth as it has done since the beginning of the reform era.³ The CPC therefore needs to anchor its right to rule to something more permanent than growth, such as its position as the source of societal values. But while the Party has become the most sought-after network for Chinese entrepreneurs instead of the vanguard of revolution, the people seem to have lost faith in communism as an ideology. China is commonly perceived to be suffering from a spiritual and ideological vacuum. The CPC is thus faced with the necessity to strengthen its position as the moral and spiritual leader of the nation.

The CPC media has called on the leadership to “re-instill a sense of moral values in society.”⁴ In order to do so, the Party today no longer resorts to communism, of which there is nothing left in arguably the most capitalist society in the world. Also nationalism, always a stock tool for any ruler whose position is shaky, is understood to be a double-edged sword. This was once again clearly demonstrated by the anti-Japanese demonstrations in many Chinese cities in the fall of 2012. On one

2. See e.g., “Conservatives dominate latest line-up for new Communist Party leadership,” *South China Morning Post*, web edition, November 2, 2012, www.scmp.com/news/china/article/1074459/partys-old-guard-dominates-latest-line-inner-most-council (accessed on December 14, 2012); “China’s leadership change puts pair ahead of their peers for 2017,” *New York Times*, 26 November 2012, www.nytimes.com/2012/11/27/world/asia/new-generation-of-communist-party-leaders-prepare-for-next-round.html?pagewanted=all (accessed on December 19, 2012).

3. Li and Shi 2009, 79.

4. “Worshipping money, China won’t gain trust,” *Global Times*, web edition, February 26, 2010, www.globaltimes.cn/opinion/editorial/2010-02/508158.html (accessed on February 26, 2010).

hand, the CPC regards it as one of its greatest accomplishments that it prevented China from being carved up by the colonial powers, including Japan. Maintaining the unity of the state is a vital source of legitimacy for the CPC. Compromise on the island dispute with Japan would have been seen as a sign of weakness. On the other hand, the Party cannot afford to let nationalism get out of hand. Demonstrations always carry the risk of evolving into voices of resistance against the government. Furthermore, Beijing does not want to jeopardize economic relations with Japan.

Instead of communism or nationalism, then, the CPC is left with history and tradition as sources for its spiritual basis. The party-state has started promoting so-called “Traditional Learning,” values embedded deep in Chinese culture, in order to repair the chinks in their rusting spiritual-ideological armor. Confucianism is often seen as synonymous with traditional Chinese culture and ethics, and therefore Confucianism plays a central role in the related discussion. In particular, “harmony,” a term which is related to Confucianism, has gained a central position in today’s political mantra. “Harmonious society” is the current pet slogan of the CPC. The party-state’s chosen ambassador of harmony both within and without China is Confucius.

There is rising interest in Confucian values in China, which has been manifested in the preservation of Confucian cultural relics and the promotion of academic research on Confucianism. Li Xiangping and Shi Dajian argue that this Confucian revival movement and the efforts of the party-state to strengthen its legitimacy are mutually beneficial processes. Li and Shi sketch a circular process whereby the allocation of “Confucian resources,” amplified by a spiritual crisis and the economic downturn, has given rise to the Confucian revival movement. The movement provides legitimization for national and local authorities, while the authorities, in turn, mobilize resources which enhance the revitalization of Confucianism.⁵

The discussion related to the possible creation of new national ideology may have repercussions on China’s foreign policy, as well. China’s State Council published a white paper in September 2011,

5. Li and Shi 2009, 79.

discussing China's peaceful development: *Zhongguo de heping fazhan baipishu*. The white paper calls for appreciation for the cultural tradition that the Chinese government fosters out of responsibility to the people: "We sincerely hope that the international community will have a deeper appreciation of China's time-honoured cultural traditions, and respect its sovereignty, security, territorial integrity and social stability, which the Chinese people hold dear."⁶

Furthermore, China aims to alleviate fears about its growing strength by stressing the benevolent and peaceful nature of its foreign policy. In the official rhetoric, China's growing strength is dubbed a "peaceful rise" and its ambitions are depicted as a "harmonious world."⁷ China's leadership assures the world that aiming for hegemony is not part of Chinese cultural heritage. The abovementioned white paper states:

The world has been believed to be a harmonious whole in Chinese culture since ancient times. This belief has a lasting impact on the thinking and acts of the Chinese nation, which is an important value that the Chinese people follow in handling interpersonal relationships, the relationship between man and nature and relations between different countries ... China's peaceful development has broken away from the traditional pattern where a rising power was bound to seek hegemony.⁸

Just how important China's perceived cultural tradition is for the narrative of the country's "peaceful rise" has been noted by John Dotson among others. As he explains, the way Imperial China supposedly conducted its foreign relations is often used to emphasize China's moral superiority "as compared to the bullying and hegemonic ways of Western

6. "China's Peaceful Development," Chinese government's official web portal, September 6, 2011, http://english.gov.cn/official/2011-09/06/content_1941354.htm (accessed on November 21, 2011).

7. The phrase "peaceful rise" (*heping jueqi*) was coined in 2003 by Zheng Bijian, the then Vice-President of the Central Party School. Note that the words "peace" and "harmony" both contain the character *he*.

8. "China's Peaceful Development," Chinese government's official web portal, September 6, 2011.

societies.”⁹ For the CPC, Confucianism allows “the regime opportunities to dress itself in the themes of benevolence and humanitarianism” and to present “a gentler face both at home and abroad.”¹⁰

China’s Foreign Policy Orientation

The father of reform in China, Deng Xiaoping, once used a particular phrase to describe China’s foreign policy ambitions. In Chinese, it reads “*taoguang yanghui, yousuo zuowei*,” which translates as “to hide one’s shining (sword blade) and foster furtiveness, then there will be accomplishments.” The phrase has since been seen as the epitome of China’s foreign relations.¹¹ This illustrates how traditional ideas, mixed with ideology and empowered by a high-ranking proponent, can become actors in their own right in Chinese foreign policy today, at least at the rhetoric level.

Although the earliest origin of the saying seems to be unknown, there is a tendency to link the saying with the stories about the shrewd strategist Liu Bei, who was one of the warlords contesting for supremacy after the Han dynasty, or King Goujian from the Warring States era, who is known for the methodical way in which he avenged the humiliations to which he had been subjected. In consequence, some Western pundits have taken the saying as proof of China’s secret military ambitions, which threaten world peace.¹² Ford echoes a similar sentiment: “The centerpiece of modern Chinese strategy in the period of post-Cold War U.S. dominance ... has been to persuade the rest of the world, in effect,

9. John Dotson. “The Confucian Revival in the Propaganda Narratives of the Chinese Government,” *U.S.–China Economic and Security Review Commission Staff Research Report*, July 20, 2011, www.uscc.gov/researchpapers/2011/Confucian_Revival_Paper.pdf (accessed on November 21, 2011), 20.

10. *Ibid.*, 22.

11. There seems to be uncertainty about when exactly Deng coined this phrase and precisely what formulation he used. See Xing Yue and Zhang Jibing, “‘*Taoguang yanghui*’ *zhanlue de sikao—Jian lun ruhe shuli Zhongguo de guoji xingxiang*,” *Guoji GuanCha* No. 6 (2006): 13–19.

12. *Ibid.*

to smile and relax while China quietly and steadily moves to restore itself to the global centrality and status that it feels has always been its birthright.”¹³

The official view in China, however, vehemently denies this literal interpretation.¹⁴ Instead, Deng Xiaoping is said to have referred to modesty: one should hide one's shining talents and (thus give time for) one's abilities (to ripen). In this context, the saying is usually translated as: “Bide our time and build up our capabilities.” In other words, China should stay neutral and not stick its neck out, avoid trouble and concentrate on economic development. In 2009, the phrase was updated by adding the word “*jianchi*” (to uphold) to the beginning of the first part and the word “*jiji*” (actively) to the beginning of the second part.¹⁵ In this way the phrase becomes even more obscure, but that was perhaps the intention.

The point is perhaps not what Deng actually meant. Nevertheless, the Chinese government is unable to break free from the omnipotence of its last “paramount leader,” and as a consequence, the government is forced to interpret Deng's (alleged) sayings in a way that maintains the modern and soft image of China it desires the world to see.

The desire to soften China's image was demonstrated by the 18th CPC congress as well. Although not much is known about the foreign policy orientation of the new leadership, the party congress provided some clues in that regard. The report, which Hu Jintao delivered as his last act as the Party Secretary, included a new phrase describing China's world view. This phrase, “*renlei mingyun gongtongti*” (human beings sharing a community of common destiny), was mentioned in the section discussing the world and China's place in it. The section highlighted

13. Christopher A. Ford, *The Mind of Empire—China's History and Modern Foreign Relations*. Lexington: The University Press of Kentucky, 2010, 233.

14. See e.g. Wang Yusheng, “Guanyu ‘taoguang yanghui’ de zaisikao,” *Huanqiu Shibao*, reprinted at Xinhuanet.com, July 13, 2004, http://news.xinhuanet.com/comments/2004-07/13/content_1594440.htm (accessed on March 13, 2012).

15. M. Taylor Fravel, “Revising Deng's Foreign Policy,” *The Diplomat*, January 17, 2012, <http://the-diplomat.com/china-power/2012/01/17/revising-deng-s-foreign-policy/> (accessed on January 17, 2012).

global interdependencies and called for building “a harmonious world of enduring peace and common prosperity.” In line with the established rhetoric, it also stressed the principles of global equality, respect for sovereignty, and opposition to hegemony and interference in other countries’ internal affairs.¹⁶ The phrase probably reflects how China wants the outside world to perceive its “rise,” and it may well become a part of China’s rhetorical arsenal.

The theme of common destiny was already present in Hu Jintao’s report at the 17th party congress. Then he said that China’s destiny is becoming ever more interlinked with the destiny of the world.¹⁷ In the 18th party congress, this idea was spelled out more prominently: “Countries should establish a new type of global development partnership that is more equitable and balanced, stick together in times of difficulty, both share rights and shoulder obligations, and boost the common interests of mankind.”¹⁸ In regard to the international order, the tone has softened significantly in Hu Jintao’s era. At the 16th party congress in 2002, Jiang Zemin stated in his report: “[T]he old international political and economic order, which is unfair and irrational, has yet to be changed fundamentally.”¹⁹

The term “community of common destiny” was also used in the section dedicated to “China’s reunification” to describe the blood bond between the compatriots on both sides of the Taiwan Strait. In that context, the term was used already in Hu’s report at the 17th party

-
16. Hu Jintao, “*Jixu cujin renlei heping yu fazhan de chonggao shiye*,” *Hu Jintao zai Zhong-Gong Di Shiba Ci Quanguo Daibiao Dahui shang suozuo baogao*, <http://politics.people.com.cn/n/2012/11/17/c1024-19611447-8.html> (accessed on November 26, 2012).
 17. Hu Jintao, “*Shizhong-buyu zou heping fazhan daolu*,” *Hu Jintao zai Dang de Shiqi Da shang de baogao*, http://news.xinhuanet.com/newscenter/2007-10/24/content_6938568_10.htm (accessed on November 26, 2012).
 18. Hu Jintao, “Continuing to Promote the Noble Cause of Peace and Development of Mankind,” Full text of Hu Jintao’s report at 18th Party Congress, http://news.xinhuanet.com/english/special/18cpcnc/2012-11/17/c_131981259_12.htm (accessed on November 26, 2012).
 19. Jiang Zemin, “The International Situation and Our External Work,” Full text of Jiang Zemin’s report at 16th Party Congress, http://news.xinhuanet.com/english/2002-11/18/content_632571.htm (accessed on November 26, 2012).

congress.²⁰ Interestingly, Lee Tenghui used a similar term, namely “*shengming gongtongti*” (community of life), to describe the mutual dependency of the “islanders” and the “mainlanders” on Taiwan in 1993. This was bitterly criticized in Mainland China where the term was seen as a pretext for Taiwanese independence.²¹

In Chinese academic writings discussing nationalism or internationalism, the term “community of common destiny” seems to have gained prominence only during the last few years. There is also debate over the question with whom China shares its destiny, and whether—as in the case of the United States—that is desirable.²² Some arguments make the over-embracing call for a community of humankind in Hu’s speech seem singularly dovish in comparison. This may, of course, derive from the fact that Hu’s message was aimed at larger audiences than the writings of researchers.

The new CPC leader and president, Xi Jinping, has also taken it upon himself to describe China’s goals with an enigmatic quotation. While visiting an exhibition at the National Museum in Beijing entitled “The Road Towards Rejuvenation,” Xi wrote:

The tomorrow of the Chinese nation may be described as “the opportune time when the heavy breeze breaks the waves.” After 170 years of continuous struggle since the Opium Wars, bright future vistas unfold for the great rejuvenation of the Chinese nation. Now we are closer to the goals of the great rejuvenation of the Chinese nation than at any point in our history, and we have more confidence and capability to realize those goals than

20. Hu Jintao, “*Tuijin ‘yiguo-liangzhi’ shijian he zuguo heping tongyi daye*,” *Hu Jintao zai Dang de Shiqi Da shang de baogao*, http://news.xinhuanet.com/newscenter/2007-10/24/content_6938568_9.htm (accessed November 26, 2012).

21. “*Taiwan shengming gongtongti*” *shi zui kedu yinxian de ‘Tai-du yishi’*,” September 25, 2008, www.mingde.gov.cn/txt/2008-09/25/content_2492481.htm (accessed on November 26, 2012).

22. See “*Zhongguo xuezheng bochi ‘Zhong-Mei bi you yi zhan’: Hezuo shi da qushi*,” May 3, 2012, <http://military.china.com/important/64/20120503/17177096.html> (accessed on November 26, 2012); Chen Kongli, “*‘Shengming gongtongti’ ge zi biaoshu*,” *Aisixiang.com*, December 28, 2010, www.aisixiang.com/data/38497.html (accessed on November 26, 2012).

*at any other time in our history.*²³

The phrase “*chang feng po lang, hui you shi*”²⁴ (the opportune time when the heavy breeze breaks the waves) is from a poem by Li Bo, the great Tang dynasty poet, presumably describing the oscillation of hope and despair in regard to reaching one’s ambitions. The phrase is part of the poem’s last verse which ends roughly thus (the abovementioned phrase reformulated and in italics): “The road is difficult, the road is difficult. So many turnings; where am I now? / *When the heavy breeze breaks the waves, it will be time* for me to set the sails, high as clouds, and cross the emerald oceans.”²⁵

“The (opportune) time” (*hui you shi*) is reminiscent of Deng Xiaoping’s “*yousuo zuowei*”: there will be a time when one’s capabilities are ripe. For Xi Jinping, this time seems to be sooner rather than later, which is to be expected. After all, the CPC is no longer talking of “building a moderately prosperous society” but instead of “completing the building of a moderately prosperous society.”²⁶ “Moderately prosperous society” was made China’s goal by Deng Xiaoping at the beginning of the reform era.²⁷ The concrete criteria set for that goal, many times readjusted, are

23. “Xi Jinping: *Cheng qian qi hou, jiwang-kailai, jixu chaozhe Zhonghua minzu weida foxing mubiao fenyong qianjin*,” Renminwang, <http://politics.people.com.cn/n/2012/1129/c1024-19744072.html> (accessed on November 26, 2012)—Translation by the author.

24. In Xinhua’s translation, the phrase is: “I will mount a long wind some day and break the heavy waves” (see “Xi highlights national goal of rejuvenation,” *China Daily* (USA), web edition, November 30, 2012, http://usa.chinadaily.com.cn/china/2012-11/30/content_15972739.htm (accessed on December 2, 2012)). This seems to be partially based on an alternate version of the phrase, “*cheng feng po lang*,” meaning “mounting the winds and breaking the waves,” uttered by General Zong Que who lived almost three centuries before Li Bo. Both versions are used interchangeably in some dictionaries.

25. “Li Bo shi, ‘*Xing lu nan fanyi shangxi*,” April 20, 2012, www.gudianwenxue.com/article/178.html (accessed on December 19, 2012): 行路難、行路難、多歧路、今安在。長風破浪會有時、直掛雲帆濟滄海—Translation by the author.

26. Hu Jintao, “Firmly march on the path of Socialism with Chinese characteristics and strive to complete the building of a moderately prosperous society in all respect,” Full text of Hu Jintao’s report at 18th Party Congress, http://news.xinhuanet.com/english/special/18cpenc/2012-11/17/c_131981259.htm (accessed on November 26, 2012).

27. “Moderately prosperous society” is a translation of the ancient concept “*Xiaokang*.” It originally meant the middle step toward achieving “*Datong*,” an ideal society which supposedly existed once in the distant past, and which Mao Zedong equated with the Communist utopia.

indeed within reach, and China need not be modest any longer.

In view of Li Bo's poem, the phrase which Xi used has a distinct nautical flavor, as if Xi were preparing to point China's shining blade to the seas soon. In the light of the recent developments in both the South and East China Seas it seems that China is indeed becoming an increasingly assertive maritime power. It is too early to say if there is any connection with the choice of the phrase and China's actions, but some signals, helpful for anticipating what China's ambitions will be, may be found in the academic discussion ongoing in China about the country's orientation to world politics.

The Demand for a Chinese International Relations Theory

It has been noted by Ford and some other scholars that in order to formulate strategies for dealing with a rising China, it is useful to look at "how China appears from the inside."²⁸ "Specifically, whether one's objective is to check Beijing's advance or simply to shape and moderate its likely future behavior ... some advantage could presumably be had in better understanding the cultural and political undercurrents ... and the characteristic patterns they seem to keep displaying in Chinese behavior."²⁹

Today, the Chinese society is increasingly multifaceted. International media reports about censorship by the party-state tend to neglect how active the discussion actually is, in different fora and varied topics, among ordinary Chinese citizens. The same is true in the academic world, where even foreign policy is eagerly discussed, even though the most controversial ideas are probably kept out of the public eye. Nevertheless, academic journals, books, and websites provide interesting glimpses on how the world appears from inside China.

28. Ford, *The Mind of Empire*, 278.

29. *Ibid.*

Yan Xuetong is one of the most famous and well established foreign policy thinkers in China. He asserts that the existing schools of international relations, realists and liberalists alike, focus on material benefit and material force, and suggests that the theories would carry more weight if they also recognized the role of morality. Yan believes that traditional Chinese thought could prove helpful in providing the existing theories with such new impetus.³⁰

More boldly, other scholars in China have suggested that a Chinese international relations theory will inevitably emerge as a consequence of China's growing role on the world stage, on the one hand, and the rise of traditional values in China on the other. Wang Jisi noted a tendency in the early 1990s in Beijing to view Chinese foreign policy as "the most moral foreign policy in the world," that China thus deserved greater influence in world affairs.³¹ In 2009, the Vice Director of the Foreign Office of the Communist Party Central Committee stated that for a rapidly rising major power, such as China, it was "unacceptable" not to have its own theory.³²

Based on the abundance of related essays and articles, produced in many different institutions across China, it seems that academics across the country have been enlisted to work on the project to create such a theory over the last few years. Political culture has deep historical roots, and tradition is a living entity in China. It is therefore no surprise that the project to create Chinese international relations theory feeds very much on both historical precedents as well as the main politoethical tradition in China, namely Confucianism, which is often seen as having guided imperial China's foreign relations as well as society as a whole.

In the following, this paper discusses the elements in the Chinese tradition that have been identified as having an impact on China's foreign policy by both Chinese scholars and outside analysts. First, there is an

30. Yan Xuetong, *Ancient Chinese Thought, Modern Chinese Power*. Daniel A. Bell and Sun Zhe, eds. and Edmund Ryden, trans. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 2011, 61.

31. Wang Jisi, "International Relations Theory and the Study of Chinese Foreign Policy: A Chinese Perspective," in *Chinese Foreign Policy: Theory and Practice*. T.W. Robinson and D. Shambaugh, eds. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1997, 502.

32. Yan Xuetong, *Ancient Chinese Thought, Modern Chinese Power*, 200.

overview of the historical—true or supposed—modes of behavior which are said to be ever visible in Chinese foreign policy, at least on an implicit level. This will be followed by a discussion on the role of Confucianism. Thereby, this paper aims to shed light on the question: If there was a “Chinese international relations theory,” what would it be like?

Paul A. Cohen has remarked that “the Western Enlightenment project that has resulted in the radical separation of history from folklore, literature, and memory never had the same impact in China.”³³ The same could be said about the separation of theory and practice. It is perhaps partially due to this cultural background that the scholars quoted in this paper tend to talk less about a “Chinese international relations theory” than a Chinese “orientation” to world politics, or more broadly, a world view.

According to Samuel S. Kim, its world view could be said to constitute the most constant level of input into China’s foreign policy decision-making process.³⁴ However, a world view can be an artificial construct, reflecting the current needs and trends of its times and creators. It may be argued that the “rise of traditional values” in China is as much a result of an orchestrated effort by the Party machinery as a spontaneous phenomenon.³⁵

Consequently, there is reason to assume that, at least in the short term, the project to outline a Chinese orientation to world politics is part of the efforts to legitimize China’s foreign policy actions. While building harmony within the country, the CCP is equally eager to assert that China’s foreign policy goal is harmony on a global scale. In the longer term, the key issue concerns the impact that the possible outcomes of the theoretical work will have on Chinese foreign policy actions.

33. Paul A. Cohen, *Speaking of History—The Story of King Goujian in Twentieth Century China*. Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 2009, xiii.

34. C. F. Samuel S. Kim, “Chinese Foreign Policy in Theory and Practice,” In *China and the World—Chinese Foreign Policy Faces the New Millennium*, S.S. Kim ed., Boulder CO: Westview Press, 1998, 10.

35. This is discussed at some length by the author in Jyrki Kallio, *Tradition in Chinese Politics—The Party-State’s Reinvention of the Past and the Critical Response from Public Intellectuals*. FIIA Report 27. Helsinki: The Finnish Institute of International Affairs, 2010.

China's Traditional Foreign Relations

It is relatively easy, thanks to the seminal works of, *inter alia*, Lucian Pye and John K. Fairbank, to deduce the elements in the imperial-era foreign politics and political philosophy which would form the basis of a Chinese orientation to international relations.³⁶ The central concept is “*Tianxia*” (All-under-Heaven), which was the word used for the world known to the Chinese. It happened to be a world where China had no contenders as a civilization, and thus *Tianxia*, the world and China were effectively the same. The emperor was the Son of Heaven, and “under the wide heaven, there was no land that was not the king’s.”³⁷ All the lesser states within *Tianxia* but outside the realm of the empire were expected to recognize the over-lordship of the emperor.

The system was held together by the observance of “*li*” (rite), which included the duty of the lesser rulers to pay tribute to the emperor who, in return, provided protection and trading rights to them (i.e., the tributary system). Ideally, the rites were the manifestation of the heavenly order, “*Tiandao*” (the Way of Heaven). *Tianxia* was thus a “value regime” and permanent as such, so that the multiple states which had coexisted during the pre-imperial era (prior to 221 B.C.) could be written off as just “power regimes” reflecting a temporary historical phenomenon.

Heaven was also the source of the rulers’ legitimacy, called “*Tian Ming*” (the Mandate of Heaven). The pet idea of the Confucians was that Heaven would discard a morally unworthy ruler and that the measure of a ruler’s “*de*” (moral worthiness) was the wellbeing of the population. Wellbeing, in turn, was evidenced by the placidity of the people and the stability of the empire. The ideal form of *Tianxia* was “*Datong*” (Great Community or Universal Commonwealth). It was believed that the golden age of *Datong* had once existed in the distant past, and that it would return with a ruler of sage morality one day. Due to the moral character of the rule of the true Son of Heaven, no coercion would be

36. See L. Pye’s *Spirit of Chinese Politics* (1968) and J.K. Fairbank’s *The Chinese World Order* (1969, ed.).

37. *Shijing*, “*Xiaoya*”: CText.org 北山 2.

needed to make the lesser rulers pay homage to him, but their respect would come as naturally as stars orbit the Polestar.³⁸

If we read morality as a code of conduct, then we may interpret *Tianxia* in “modern” terms simply as a rule-based community or commonwealth, global in scope and international or even supranational in character. From the “Chinese” perspective, the Westphalian system, in contrast, signifies merely a loose collection of states driven by their own national interests; in the words of Zhao Tingyang, a Chinese scholar, it is a “non-world.”³⁹ The question remains, however, as to where the Polestar is and who gets to define the rules. The centrality of the tributary system is a major challenge for transferring the Chinese imperial “international relations” practices into the international community of today.

As Ford has illustrated, there are Chinese international relations theorists who look for inspiration in the only time when “interstate relations” actually existed in China. This was the Warring States Era (475–221 B.C.) which, as the name implies, bears a certain resemblance to classical Greece with its city-states. Yan Xuetong is one such theorist. He has published extensively on—to paraphrase the title of his English language monograph—the benefits of ancient Chinese thought for the modern Chinese power.

According to Yan Xuetong, the competition between international actors over power status is essentially a zero-sum game. In order to define and measure power status, Yan has presented a formula for calculating a country’s “comprehensive national power.” Yan defines comprehensive national power as the product of “hard power” and “soft power.” This formula rules that if either one of the factors is zero, the product will be zero. Yan argues that a country’s hard power is seldom zero, but soft power can sometimes be so. As China’s economic and military resources are both growing, political power must also be increasing accordingly.⁴⁰

38. See *Analects*: CText.org 為政 1.

39. Zhao Tingyang, “*Wei shenme tichu ‘Tianxia tixi’ lilun*,” *Zhong Ping*, web edition, 62 (2005), reprinted at ChinaReview.com, August 5, 2005, <http://www.china-review.com/gao.asp?id=16575> (accessed on March 13, 2012).

40. Yan Xuetong, “The Rise of China and its Power Status,” *The Chinese Journal of International Politics* No. 1 (2006): 5–33.

Yan notes that, in 2009, Hu Jintao particularly emphasized the need for a greater political and moral impact in China's foreign policy.⁴¹

In addition to considering foreign politics a zero-sum game, Yan's other premise is that the central attribute of political power is "morally informed leadership." Based on these premises he states that between the United States and China, "the country that displays more humane authority will win."⁴² Yan is drawing inspiration from several ancient Chinese thinkers who "hold that morality and the interstate order are directly related, especially at the level of personal morality of the leader and its role in determining the stability of interstate order."⁴³ Moral leadership requires worthy leaders, and ancient thinkers therefore put a lot of emphasis on recruiting talented people in the service of the rulers.

Yan stresses that many ancient thinkers, particularly two Confucian thinkers—Mencius and Xunzi—made a clear distinction between "hegemonists" as undesirable tyrants and "sage kings" as ideal, humane rulers. While this is applicable with regard to Mencius and Xunzi, Yan has a tendency to see this division even where it is not really present. This is unfortunately further amplified by the translation, where the word *wang* is translated as "sage king" or "humane authority," even when it should be understood just as "king (the ruler)." Yang Qianru also notes this in her comment on Yan's thesis.⁴⁴ It is clear that Yan wishes in every possible manner to promote the idea that it is in the genes of China to follow the way of the sage kings when it one day replaces the hegemonistic U.S. as the world leader.

For China's international security policy, the ancient thinkers convey two messages, according to Yan: "First, China should mainly rely on its own military construction to maintain its own peaceful environment."⁴⁵ As the world is not peaceful, it means that China should increase its

41. Yan Xuetong, *Ancient Chinese Thought, Modern Chinese Power*, 216.

42. Yan Xuetong, "How China can defeat America," *New York Times*, November 20, 2011, www.nytimes.com/2011/11/21/opinion/how-china-can-defeat-america.html (accessed on November 21, 2011).

43. *Ibid.*, 39.

44. *Ibid.*, 150.

45. *Ibid.*, 63.

military capacity. "Second, China should press for the establishment of an international security system and norms, and promote the realization of universal world peace."⁴⁶ According to Yan, this cannot be done by the creation of a world government, which is impossible due to the growing number of countries. Instead, world leadership belongs to the state that manifests responsible and moral leadership. The judgment should be left for other states to make. If China wishes to reach that position, it must first attract more talents than the U.S., writes Yan.

In short, Yan argues that seeking "humane authority" instead of hegemony is the key to success in the international arena today. Although Yan draws his examples from the pre-imperial era, when the tributary system did not exist, he is in some sense promoting a "mental" tributary system based on a moral as opposed to a power-related hierarchy. As Xu Jin points out in his comment, the challenge here is how to avoid other states thinking that China is pursuing hegemony.⁴⁷

Confucian Foreign Relations

Yan Xuetong has been discussing ancient Chinese (pre-221 B.C.) thinkers *en masse*. However, such generalizations are not without problems. Ja Ian Chong notes in his book review that Yan and the other collaborators on the book should have taken into account the varying opinions that Chinese thinkers across time have expressed about the concepts that are central to classical Chinese thought.⁴⁸ The same challenge lies ahead for those scholars who have tried to outline what Confucian foreign policy would specifically look like. An added difficulty is that the early Confucians were mostly concerned with internal affairs of a country.

First, one has to ask whether Confucianism actually suits the purposes of foreign policy soft power. Sam Crane answers in the negative. He quite

46. *Ibid.*, 64.

47. Xu Jin, "The Two Poles of Confucianism: A Comparison of the Interstate Political Philosophies of Mencius and Xunzi," in *ibid.*, 161–80, 180.

48. Ja Ian Chong, "Ancient Chinese Thought, Modern Chinese Power" (book review), *The China Quarterly* 208 (December 2011) 1033–34.

rightly points out that the core Confucian principles, such as “rejection of the profit motive; advocacy of material simplicity; and subordination of the individual,” have little material grounding or support in contemporary China.⁴⁹ In particular, “[t]he emerging marketplace society works against the practical performance of Confucian ideals and this undercuts the attractive potential of Confucianism as soft power.”⁵⁰ It is indeed difficult to see how “rejection of profit motive” has any relevance in today’s China, especially in the light of the incredible concentration of wealth among China’s top legislature.⁵¹ Crane concludes that while opportunities will arise for the expansion of China’s soft power in the wake of its economic growth, “that soft power will be a modern Chinese soft power, it will not be Confucian soft power.”⁵²

While Crane’s argument may well be right in principle, there are two practical counterarguments. First, the interpretations of Confucianism have always fluctuated with the times. As Crane himself points out, “[w]hen the Chinese economy was weak, Confucianism was interpreted as an impediment to economic transformation; when the Chinese economy is strong, Confucianism is framed as a facilitator of growth and development.”⁵³ Second, what probably matters more to the Communist Party is what Confucianism may be made to look like rather than what it really is. After all, the venerable philosopher is so much better as a figurehead for China than, for example, Chairman Mao Zedong. It is no coincidence that the spearheads of the efforts of China’s Ministry of Culture to spread the country’s cultural influence have been named Confucius Institutes.

49. Sam Crane, “Confucianism as Soft Power,” Uselesstree.typepad.com, March 2010, <http://uselesstree.typepad.com/files/confucianism-as-soft-power.doc> (accessed on November 21, 2011), 10.

50. *Ibid.*, 19.

51. Michael Forsythe, “China’s billionaire People’s Congress makes Capitol Hill look like pauper,” *Bloomberg*, wed edition, February 27, 2012, www.bloomberg.com/news/2012-02-26/china-s-billionaire-lawmakers-make-u-s-peers-look-like-paupers.html (accessed on February 28, 2012).

52. Crane, “Confucianism as Soft Power,” 27.

53. *Ibid.*, 22.

In any case, Chinese academics are busy providing content for a Confucian foreign policy. For example, Wang Shengcai discusses the difference between Western realism and Confucianism in international relations from the viewpoint of two traditional concepts, namely “*yi*” (justice) and “*li*” (benefit). In line with Yan Xuetong, Wang states that realism equals “*Badao*” (the Way of Hegemon), whereas Confucianism which preaches “*Wangdao*” (the Way of the (Sage) Kings), has similarities with the idealistic school. In Confucianism, justice, albeit remote, must come first and benefit, even if immediate, second. One does not need to disregard benefit, but one must not gain it through unjust means.⁵⁴

Wang Shengcai claims that Chinese foreign-policy decision-making puts equal emphasis on justice and benefit, and emphasizes justice more than that of other countries. China’s peaceful rise is only possible through cooperation in the Asia-Pacific region, and cooperation is not possible without the countries putting justice and common good over their own interests. Wang argues that China’s call to “shelve the disputes, exploit together” in the South China Sea is a concrete example of this Confucian-flavored foreign policy.

Wang Shengcai also points out that even a Confucian foreign policy must be backed up military preparedness. He quotes Confucius who is recorded to have said: “When dealing with civilian matters, one must make military precautions; when dealing with military matters, one must make civilian precautions.”⁵⁵ Wang states that the main trend in imperial China’s foreign relations was a pragmatic Way of the Kings. Today, following the same trend calls especially for improving relations with the neighboring countries, writes Wang. He concludes by stating that tradition must not be allowed to lead one astray: aiming for global justice must not lead to neglect of one’s national interests.

Gai Yannan helps to make the connection between the rites, a central concept in Confucius’ *Analects* denoting the code of propriety, and

54. Wang Shengcai, “*Rujia yi–liguan de xiandai jiedu jiqi dui Zhongguo waijiao juece de yingxiang*,” *Xibei Di'er Minzu Xueyuan Xuebao* 70:2 (2006).

55. *Shiji*: CText.org 孔子世家 17—Translation by the author.

foreign politics.⁵⁶ Gai repeats the so-called culturalist interpretation of imperial China: the *Tianxia* was a cultural union with the empire as the centre. It was surrounded by widening circles of “the other”: first vassal states ruled by the emperor’s blood-relatives closest to the centre, then the tribute-bearing nations, and other barbarians furthest away. This ideal dates back to the mythical past preceding the great Confucian thinkers, as Yan Xuetong notes in his chapter discussing Xunzi’s interstate philosophy.⁵⁷ Tellingly, Ford notes how during the last imperial dynasty, the Qing, the Board of Rites was responsible for overseeing relations with the Confucianized tributaries in South East Asia, while the Board of Barbarian Control managed relations with the Tibetans and Mongolians, as well as with Russia.⁵⁸

As Gai Yannan explains, such a world view included the thought that when the center was at peace, there would also be prosperity outside. Gai quotes a saying which is part of a longer sentence, recorded in historical writings: “Shun (a mythical sage ruler) sent eight talented envoys to preach the Five Teachings—father must be just, mother must be caring, elder brother must be supportive, younger brother must be reverent, son must be filial—to all four compass points, and then there was peace inside (the land) and prosperity outside (its borders).”⁵⁹ According to this idea, it was necessary to make the tributary states embrace the Confucian code of propriety in order to maintain peace and co-prosperity within the *Tianxia*.

Not all scholars are happy with the equating of the tributary system with imperial China’s foreign relations. For example, according to Zhang Feng, even the term “tributary system” is problematic. First of all, its nature was different in different eras. Furthermore, the whole concept is of Western origin; the Chinese dynasties were not consciously implementing any systematic scheme but were rather just following

56. Gai Yannan, “Zhongguo waijiao sixiang chuantong lilu de diandi kaoding,” *Shehui Kexuejia* No. 6 (2010): 72–73.

57. Yan Xuetong, *Ancient Chinese Thought, Modern Chinese Power*, 95–99.

58. Ford, *The Mind of Empire*, 99.

59. *Shiji*: CText.org 五帝本紀 22; *Zuozhuan*: CText.org 文公十八年—Translation by the author.

customs that at times included visits by vassals to the imperial court to pay tribute.⁶⁰

Li Fawei analyzes traditional Chinese foreign relations on the basis of yet another core concept in the *Analects*, namely *ren*, often translated as “humaneness.”⁶¹ It is usually seen as the balancing partner of rites, or propriety. Li writes that the essence of *ren* is to love one’s fellow men, and in order to be able to do that, one has to cultivate oneself through following propriety. The final goal of self-cultivation (of a ruler) is the ability to pacify All-Under-Heaven. Li quotes Mencius who wrote that when a ruler governs through humaneness, he has no enemies. In other words, when the Son of Heaven was virtuous, the barbarians in all directions would submit to his authority. This is the idea of a “sage king” to which Yan Xuetong also refers.

Li then extrapolates humaneness into the realm of foreign relations. First, traditional Chinese foreign relations, according to Li, followed the principle of conciliation. As written in the *Analects*: “If far-away people are not submissive, one must attract them to become so through the cultivation of culture and virtue.”⁶² Li also reminds readers about the conciliatory foreign policy of the Ming Dynasty, and quotes Emperor Xuande, who wrote in 1428: “In controlling the barbarians, defence is the best method.”

Li omitted a part of the quotation where Emperor Xuande also said that the barbarians are uncivilized vermin that must be kept at bay: “The sages (of old) compared All-Under-Heaven to a household: The Central Kingdom is the building, and the barbarians of the four compass points are what is outside the garden walls. In the house there are people living, rites and music, and a proper hierarchy; whereas only grass, trees and

60. Zhang Feng, “Jiegou chaogong tixi,” *Guoji Zhengzhi Kexue* 22:2 (2010): 33–62.

61. Li Fawei, “Rujia xinxing lilun dui chuantong Zhongguo duiwai guanxi de yingxiang,” *Ningxia Shehui Kexue* No.3 (2011): 120–23.

62. *Analects*: CText.org 季氏 1—Translation by the author.

insects live outside the walls. Such is the Heavenly Order.”⁶³

Second, Li explains that the proprietary formalities—rites—associated with the tributary system signalled comity between China and the tribute-bearing nations. Li quotes *Hanshu*, the history of the Han dynasty: “Rites are necessary for regulating external relations and setting the differences ... the differences mean fear and respect ... and when there is fear and respect, there is no contention.”⁶⁴ Although Li says that this exemplifies the tradition of courtesy and reciprocity in China’s external relations, the quotation and historical facts speak of a rather unequal system.

Third, Li states that the ultimate goal of the Confucians was to bring peace to All-Under-Heaven. Li uses the first emperor of the Ming Dynasty as an example of corresponding foreign policy which emphasized civilian virtue instead of military strength. Li quotes the emperor: “We have been made the Ruler of the Central Kingdom by Heaven but We fear that there are those far and near who have not heard this, and this is why We now make this known to you, kings ... Make no mistake! ... Those who have already recognized our legitimacy may coexist peacefully with their neighbours far and near and jointly enjoy the prosperity brought by this era of perfect peace.”⁶⁵

Li seems impervious to the assertiveness of the quotes by the Ming emperors. This is perhaps because the conventional image of that dynasty, visualized by the impressive but ultimately defensive Great Wall, built to its glory during the 14th and 15th centuries, is one of a peaceful nation. According to Li, this peacefulness was due to the agricultural (as opposed to nomadic) roots of Chinese society. The historical facts, again, point toward a less idealistic interpretation of the *Zeitgeist*. Alistair Iain Johnston has demonstrated that the foreign relations of the Ming dynasty were marked by constant warfare and that the Chinese were the initiators

63. “*Ming Xuande zhang, Huangdi shilu juan zhi sanshiba*,” *Daizhige cang shu*, <http://wenxian.fanren8.com/06/03/48/40.htm> (accessed on December 19, 2012): 蓋聖人以天下為家、中國猶堂宇、四夷則藩垣之外也。堂宇人所居、有禮樂有上下、藩垣之外草木昆虫從而生長之、亦天道也。 — Translation by the author.

64. *Hanshu*: CText.org 禮樂志 3—Translation by the author.

65. Translation by the author.

of hostilities, even expansive wars, whenever they had the ability to do so.⁶⁶

An oft-cited example of the inherent peacefulness of Ming Dynasty foreign relations are the sea voyages led by the eunuch admiral Zheng He. In the white paper about China's peaceful development, the sea voyages are described as follows:

Under the influence of the culture of harmony, peace-loving has been deeply ingrained in the Chinese character ... The famous Ming Dynasty navigator Zheng He made seven voyages to the Western Seas, visiting over 30 countries and regions across Asia and Africa. He took along with him the cream of the Chinese culture and technology as well as a message of peace and friendship ... We respect different cultures and views, treat others in the same way as we expect to be treated, and do not impose our will upon others. We treat all foreign countries with courtesy, foster harmonious ties with neighbours and make friends with distant states.⁶⁷

The historical reality, however, is somewhat different. The fleets were heavily armed, and the sheer size of the flagships and the number of vessels in the fleets were enough to discourage any resistance. Furthermore, there is evidence that the fleets did interfere in some internal conflicts at their ports of call.⁶⁸

Tang Li and Hu Biyu identify three further conceptual ideas from Confucianism which they believe have an effect on contemporary China's foreign policy.⁶⁹ One is *zhongyong*, an ambiguous term usually translates as "doctrine of the mean." It carries several meanings, such as moderation, propriety, equilibrium and objectivity. Tang and Hu

66. Alistair Iain Johnston, *Cultural Realism—Strategic Culture and Grand Strategy in Chinese History*, Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1998, 236–42.

67. "China's Peaceful Development," Chinese government's official web portal, September 6, 2011.

68. See e.g. Harold M. Tanner, *China, A History, Volume I—From Neolithic Cultures through the Great Qing Empire*. Indianapolis: Hackett Publishing, 2010, 290.

69. Tang Li and Hu Biyu, "Qianxi Rujia sixiang dui dangdai Zhongguo waijiao de yingxiang," *Suihua Xueyuan Bao* 30:1 (2010), 44–45.

connect *zhongyong* with the maxim “strive for harmony but allow for the existence of differences.” According to them, the idea manifests itself in the Five Principles of Peaceful Coexistence which have been the cornerstone of China’s foreign policy rhetoric since the Bandung Conference in 1955. Another is the idea of “emphasizing justness and downplaying profit.” According to Tang and Hu, this idea has been manifested in China’s principled opposition toward U.S. hegemony in Indo-China and on the Korean peninsula.

The third idea which Tang Li and Hu Biyu highlight is a pair of concepts formed by *zhong* and *shu*. They originate from the *Analects*. Tang and Hu explain *zhong* as an earnest desire to do good for one’s fellow men and society. *Shu* is explained through the Confucian version of the Golden Rule: “what you do not wish for yourself, do not do unto others.”⁷⁰ According to Tang and Li, *zhong* is reflected in China’s support for global equality and solidarity. *Shu*, in turn, is reflected in the principles of mutual non-interference, equality and peaceful coexistence.

It must be pointed out that the above-mentioned interpretation of *zhong* is rather original. I agree with Bryan W. Van Norden who argues that in the *Analects*, *zhong* has the meaning of “loyalty” toward the ruler. Also, the conventional interpretation which dates to the famous “neo-Confucian” Zhu Xi (1130–1200), is different from Tang’s and Li’s. According to Zhu Xi, *zhong* means “fully realizing oneself” or, in the translation by D. C. Lau, “doing one’s best.”⁷¹ This exemplifies how problematic it often is to assign explanatory powers to classical concepts.

A cynical person might, from the very same examples that were used by the Chinese authors quoted above, draw the conclusion that the real heritage of imperial China’s foreign relations is simply a sharp division between “us” and “the other” and a blind faith in the moral and cultural superiority of the Central Kingdom. In addition, one could write off China’s support for the Third World and, by extension, for a more just global order, as a remnant of Communist ideals and as an echo of the competition over international influence against the Soviet Union. The

70. See *Analects*: CText.org 衛靈公 24.

71. Bryan W. Van Norden, “The Dao of Kongzi,” *Asian Philosophy* 12:3 (2002): 157–72.

occasionally defensive nature of China's foreign relations, in turn, could in the light of Johnston's study be explained by periods of inability and weakness.

Nevertheless, it would be unwise to overlook the deep-rooted perceptions of history that are still immensely influential in Chinese politics. Ford begins his book with the presumption that China's strategic culture and history do have an effect on Chinese views on international order and legitimacy. The most prevalent trend is labelled "Sinic monism" by the writer. By that, he refers to "the need of political unity, the natural order of all politics as a pyramidal hierarchy, and the fundamental illegitimacy of truly separate and independent state sovereigns."⁷² These aspects are all present in the discussions quoted above.

However, monism is apparently contradicted by non-interventionism, which goes hand in hand with China's affection for state sovereignty. Ford suggests, not altogether convincingly, that China's insistence on non-interference is defined in opposition to international human rights law and the idea of humanitarian intervention, and is thus a sign of pragmatism instead of principled adherence to the Westphalian system.⁷³

In relation to seeking historical precedence in the Warring States era, Ford points out that the commitment by all states to the idea that someone must rule was conducive to zero-sum warfare.⁷⁴ To the Chinese, writes Ford, this means the belief in just two possible choices for China: "being on top or being in subjugation."⁷⁵ Furthermore, it is of significance that the ancient masters were all in favor of returning to the unity of All-Under-Heaven that had (at least ideally) existed before their time, although Yan Xuetong may not sufficiently stress the fact.⁷⁶

In conclusion, Ford is very concerned about China's unpredictability. According to him, the longstanding faith in clever stratagems and the

72. Ford, *The Mind of Empire*, 4.

73. *Ibid.*, 266.

74. *Ibid.*, 63.

75. *Ibid.*, 156.

76. See Yang, "An Examination of the Research Theory of Pre-Qin Interstate Political Philosophy," 157.

tendency to see “comprehensive national power” in terms of *shi*, a traditional concept which combines the meanings of not only power, but also status and opportunity, may lead China to use force when nobody would expect it to do so from a rationalistic viewpoint.⁷⁷

The position of Taiwan, being related to perceptions about China’s unity, is one case where rationality may cease to prevail. The main reason why the so-called Taiwan issue is so politically sensitive for the communist regime on the Mainland is the belief that maintaining unity is vital for the ruler’s legitimacy. As long as Taiwan is not an integral part of China, the legitimacy of the Communist Party is incomplete. Although the Taiwan issue is just one of the challenges related to achieving, maintaining and defining unity in China, it is the biggest remaining obstacle for greater China’s complete unity or “China’s reunification.” Furthermore, the feud between Taiwan and the Mainland has the potential to escalate into an international military conflict between the major powers. Therefore, the situation remains unpredictable and highly volatile.

Concluding Remarks

China is rising. In its wake, Confucius is entering the arena of international relations. The CCP seems to believe that nobody can give a human face to China better than Confucius. Confucius is used to promote a positive image of the nation, for example, through the growing network of Confucius Institutes, already established in almost 90 countries. The propagandists in Beijing are also explaining how the foreign relations of imperial China were based on such Confucian values as harmony and mutual benefit. According to the propagandists’ narrative, China did not occupy foreign lands because Confucius taught that an enlightened ruler with high moral standards would win the world over without wars. This tradition will continue, and it is the highest hope of contemporary China’s leaders that the whole world becomes one community. Nobody needs to fear China’s rise, the narrative assures us.

77. Ford, *The Mind of Empire*, 272–73.

Indeed, trust is a much better basis for international relations than fear. Trust, however, is built only by deeds, not words. China's position with regard to the atrocities in Syria, for instance, does not make the country look like a responsible world actor. In China's defense, it can perhaps be said that China's hands are bound by its insistence on the principle of mutual non-interference, one of the Five Principles of Peaceful Coexistence. Upholding that principle is of vital importance for China, which does not want foreign powers to intervene in matters such as human rights abuses in Tibet.

At the same time, it is easy to see that in the future China will be faced with dilemmas when its growing overseas interests, such as mining and farming in Africa, become threatened. Then China's consistency will be tested, and the contradiction between the preferred narratives, centering on "monism," and the harsh realities related to state sovereignty, will surface. Looking at the Chinese government's actions aimed at increasing harmony within China—tellingly, Chinese netizens have dubbed censorship "harmonization"—it is probably not overly cynical to assume that China will endeavor to explain its own projections of power outside its borders as being conducive to world harmony, and any attempts to interfere with its internal affairs as just the opposite.

China's leaders adamantly deny that their country has any aspirations to become hegemonic. It is, of course, possible that they are being earnest. Nevertheless, it seems clear that China will not allow any other nation to become hegemonic either, if it can help it. Furthermore, China will not settle for a position as a second-class major power but will want to take part in the reformulation of the rules and criteria of a possible new international order. This is clearly manifested by the existence of the discussion aimed at the creation of a Chinese international relations theory.

"Soft power" and "peaceful rise" are good slogans for explaining China's desire to harmonize the world, and Confucius is a good ambassador for peace. However, in Confucius' own time, the upbringing of a gentleman included not only peaceful, cultural pursuits, such as music and poetry but, just as importantly, archery and charioteering. Confucius was no pacifist. Similarly, one cannot deny that there is a

sword in China's scabbard. Such vigilance is naturally the right and, one could argue, even the responsibility of every sovereign nation.

With China, the main concern has to do with unpredictability: When and why might China bare its shining blade remains an enigma for many outside observers. Indeed, there is widespread suspicion that China's soft power is going to give way to hard power when the country has the potential for it. There is also the fear that, in order to bolster their position, China's new leadership may not deem they can afford to allow for abilities and models to ripen with time, and they may hasten to make "the opportune time" happen now. In this regard, the recent developments in China's neighboring maritime regions are particularly worrisome. Whether China's assertiveness merely reflect its desire to stop being in subjugation, or whether it is more aggressive in nature, is a question that can only be answered in time.

In view of this perceived unpredictability, a Chinese international relations theory would certainly be helpful. Judging by what we can deduce from the related discussion so far, there is no theory to speak of. We may, nevertheless, detect the outline of a skeletal model. Putting traditional concepts aside, a world constructed in accordance with the Chinese international relations model would basically mean a rule-based community or commonwealth, global in scope and international or even supranational in character. In Hu Jintao's words, this would be a community of common destiny. The authority to define the rules would lie within the state which manifests responsible and moral leadership. In essence, there would be a mental tributary system where the other states revolve around the moral leader. The question naturally arises, does the model imply that the position of the Polestar may only belong to China?

Kallio, Jyrki. 2015b. "Dreaming of the Great Rejuvenation of the Chinese Nation". *Fudan Journal of Humanities and Social Sciences*. Vol. 8, Issue 4 (2015). Pp. 521–532. Available electronically at DOI: 10.1007/s40647-015-0097-4. With permission of Springer. © Fudan University 2015.

Published in the printed version of the dissertation, ISBN 978-952-484-936-4
Also available online: <http://rdcu.be/mEpt>

CHAPTER FIVE

CARVING OUT A ROLE FOR A CONFUCIAN CHINA ON THE WORLD STAGE

JYRKI KALLIO

Introduction

China's hard power is on the rise, and the Party-state is keen to construct a new narrative that would legitimise China's position as the world leader also from the soft power perspective. The need for such a narrative has arisen from the realization that there is an ideological vacuum within China, as the ideals of communism have no relevance to the present society. What is more, the Party does not want to see people turn to foreign belief systems or embrace Western values. Therefore, the Party has launched a dedicated project with the goal of formulating a new set of values that would guide the people. Chinese traditional schools of thought provide a good foundation for this, and they also appeal to the people's national pride. Among the traditional schools of thought, Confucianism is the one most oriented towards good governance, thus it became central to the Party's project.

Sunzi, the author of the *Art of War*, has enjoyed longstanding popularity in the West thanks to the popularized versions of his book, which transpose his martial ideas into the fields of leadership, management and even relationships. However, Sunzi is not the best figurehead for China's peaceful rise. This shortcoming was realized by the authors of a fictional book written in 1997 (*China is Number One in 2030*), which describes China's rise to the leading superpower by the year 2030. In the book, Chinese peacekeepers set out to restore order in the United States. When American refugees return home from China in July 2016, many of them take two books with them; not the *Art of War*, which had been so popular during the previous decades, but a Chinese cookbook and the *Analects* by Confucius (Song and Zhang et al. 1997, 62).

If Confucius (ca. 552–479 BCE) is the new figurehead for China, then President Xi Jinping is the figurehead for the project to revive traditional schools of thought in China. The beginnings of the Party's project were noticeable as far back as the 1980s, and it was during Hu Jintao's era (2002–2012) that the “harmonious society” became the catchphrase for the Party's goals. It can be said that harmony is a Confucian value. Xi Jinping has since widened the scope and has been talking about China's desire to build a “harmonious world”. His speeches are abundant in classical references. He is said to be the best versed Chinese leader in classical literature since Mao Zedong (1893–1976), the founding father of the People's Republic, and was apparently used to resorting to classical quotations long before he became leader at the national level (Ye 2014). The “Chinese Dream”, the catchphrase of Xi's era, is said to stand for the rejuvenation of the Chinese nation (Xi 2014, 37–38), and the revival and internationalization of traditional Chinese values is a part of this dream.

Xi Jinping has also been compared to Deng Xiaoping (1904–1997), the father of China's reform policies that opened the country up (Zhuang 2014). Under Xi's leadership, the role of market forces was strengthened, legal reforms were pledged, and the anti-corruption campaign he launched was favourably received by the general public (Economy 2014). The Communiqué of the Fourth Plenum of the 18th Central Committee of the Communist Party of China (Xinhua 2014) brought together Xi's reform policies and the project aimed at reviving tradition: “We ... must persist in the integration of ruling the country according to the law (*yi fa zhi guo* 依法治國) and ruling the country by virtue (*yi de zhi guo* 以德治國)....”¹

The latter part of the phrase reeks of Confucian political ideals. It has even led some pundits to speculate whether Xi wants to be seen as leading by means of his own personal virtue. In a discussion on Xi Jinping's “love affair with Confucius” Michael Schuman (2014) wrote for *Time*:

Xi also apparently believes that Confucius can bolster his own standing in the country. Confucius' ideal government was topped by a “sage-king”.... By combining one-man rule with the morality of Chinese antiquity, (Xi) appears to be painting himself up as some newfangled communist / Confucian sage-king—an all-commanding figure who will usher in a new epoch of prestige and prosperity.

¹ All translations from the Chinese are by the author himself, unless indicated otherwise. In the official translation (China Copyright and Media 2014), “by virtue” reads “according to virtue”.

It is nevertheless exaggerated to talk of a “love-affair”. So far, both Xi Jinping and the Communist Party in general have steered clear of openly endorsing Confucianism as such. This is because the communist revolution and its predecessors were strongly anti-Confucian. Confucianism was seen as the embodiment of everything that was rotten and reactionary in Chinese society. The Party is not yet ready to turn its coat, hence it is officially promoting “Traditional Learning” (*guoxue* 國學; also translated as “national learning”) instead: an amalgamation of carefully selected values from several traditional schools of thought.

It is clear that the Party is willing to endorse only those traditional values that it deems useful for its purposes. All communist leaders, from Mao Zedong to Xi Jinping, have emphasized that one should “discard the dross and keep the essence” of traditional schools of thought. Parallel to the Party’s project, the traditional schools of thought have been enjoying a revival of sorts within the country for years. This has come about partly due to the Party’s project and partly as a reflection of the popular realization that societal values have been lost. Many people also started questioning the basis of their identity as Chinese citizens. As a consequence, there is an ongoing search for the “true” tradition even at a grass-roots level. The way in which the Party-affiliated scholars have been interpreting the core of Confucianism has not been greeted solely by applause (Kallio 2011).

However, some people want to have faith in the true affinity between the Party and tradition. Professor Kang Xiaoguang from the Renmin University, a prominent representative of the so-called New Confucians, a diffuse group of intellectuals who want to recast Confucian teachings as applicable to modern society, believes that a fundamental cultural and systemic change, which he calls the “Grand Realignment” (*Da zhuangui* 大轉軌) is currently taking place in China. Kang envisages that the next track in China’s development will be “Confucian socialist constitutionalism”. This would unite Chinese cultural tradition, which has been long neglected, with the Western influences that have shaped China’s politico-economic system over the last century. The political legitimacy of the new track would come from the government following the Confucian virtue *ren* 仁, variously translated as “humanness” or “goodness”. The system would mature gradually, with the market economy forming the basis, and the cultural forces shaping the process (Kang 2014).

Kang (2014) believes that the unique Confucian socialist constitutionalism would strengthen China’s soft power in an unprecedented manner, which would make China a globally dominant force. Paraphrasing the Confucian

classic *Great Learning* (*Daxue* 大學), he wrote: “The way of the great power illustrates the illustrious virtue, renovating the people and resting only at the highest excellence”.² He does not elaborate on what this kind of soft power would look like or how it would change the world. He seems to be content with showing implicit support for the national rejuvenation scheme led by Xi Jinping.

While Kang’s vision might be far-fetched, the Party’s project to revive—or revise, depending on the viewpoint—tradition is likely to continue for quite some time. It may prove significant that the most important milestone in realizing the Chinese Dream, the centennial of the People’s Republic in 2049, is also the 2,600th anniversary of the birth of Confucius. One must believe that this sort of symbolism will be utilized to the full. Professor Liu Xiaoying (2012, 111) from the University of International Relations (Beijing) remarked that traditional culture, which has already played a great role in the rise of China, will remain the basis for China’s overall strengthening also in the future.

Some Chinese researchers in the field of international relations have expressed the expectation that China’s growing importance in the global arena should bring about a “Chinese IR Theory” based on traditional, especially Confucian, values and ideals (see e.g. Yan 2011, 256). These are said to include, inter alia, decency, harmony, peace, and common prosperity. When expanded into the international arena, these values are said to promote behaviour characterized by conciliation, comity, reciprocity, justness, solidarity, and anti-hegemony (see e.g. Li 2011). It is often said that when imperial China was ruled in accordance with Confucian virtues, it did not engage in wars of aggression or the conquest of foreign territories. However, extrapolating such ideals into contemporary realities requires a significant leap of faith.

The first question that springs to mind is whether the idea of “Confucian international relations” is based on a real historical precedent. Opinions among Chinese scholars vary. Some argue that the idealized system of vassals under the Zhou Kings, or the tributary system of the later imperial era, can serve as precedents. Others, most prominently Professor Yan Xuetong (2011) from the Tsinghua University, who is one of the leading figures in the debate on China’s international relations, look to the Warring States era (475–221 BCE) which, as the name implies, bears a

² The quotation originates from the *Book of Rites*, *Daxue* 1. The translation is a modification of Legge (1972, 357). The numbering of the paragraphs in the classical texts here and elsewhere follows the Chinese Text Project.

certain resemblance to classical Greece with its city-states. They believe that this was the only period in Chinese history during which “interstate relations” actually existed in China. If we are to have faith in the existence of a historical precedent, at least theoretically, we need to examine whether identifiable guiding principles can be found behind such a historical system, and if so, whether they are of relevance to the present world.

Opinions also differ in regard to relevance. Some Western academics welcome China’s efforts to disseminate its soft power through its traditional culture. For example, the sinologist Roger Ames (2011, 4) stated that the rise of China is leading to “a creative fusion of Confucianism with other narratives”. In contrast, Dr Christopher Ford, who has made a long career in the US government, regards the emerging narrative which utilizes Confucianism for the legitimization of the Communist Party as fundamentally illiberal and argues that “harmony” fundamentally opposes Western political liberalism. He warns that “the monist, hierarchic, and self-consciously virtocratic Confucian model of authority” is being made “a template for the entire international system” (Ford 2014).

According to Professor Sungmoon Kim (2014, 10) from the City University of Hong Kong, the discord between the “East” and the “West” is not about the alleged incompatibility between liberalism and Confucianism but the fact that the liberal-democratic institutions imported from the West, are “not socially relevant in East Asian societies, where citizens are soaked in Confucian habits and mores...”. A similar sentiment is echoed by François Godement (2013), who noted that international law and international institutions are Western imports which have failed to take root in Asia.

Kim (2014, 9, 18–19) believes that philosophical Confucianism is no longer relevant as the East Asian nations have already digested the Western rights-based and interest-oriented discourses. Nevertheless, he asserts that East Asian societies remain behaviourally Confucian, as their continuing Confucian habits and traits are immediately apparent to an outside observer. These traits include the patriarchal family system in South Korea as well as the hierarchical organizations in Japan.

As similar habits and traits can be found in other East Asian societies, it is questionable whether their presence has anything to do with China’s foreign policy. If this was the case, one would expect the foreign policy of all East Asian nations to follow similar principles. And to a certain extent, they do. The maxim of “a wealthy state and a strong military” (富國強兵)

is known in China (*fuguo qiangbing*), Japan (*fukoku kyōhei*) and Korea (*bukuk gangbyung*) alike. Nevertheless, this maxim can hardly be considered Confucian, as it originates from a text (*Shangjun Shu*, Yi yan 2) from the Legalist school.³ The maxim talks of hard power, and the question is, where does this leave the softer Confucian values.

Rising above Confucian Hermeneutics

A steady stream of articles discussing the possibility of a “Chinese IR Theory” and its nature can currently be found in Chinese academic publications as well as elsewhere. The applied approaches can loosely be divided into three categories. The first approach lists certain relevant key Confucian concepts and virtues and then discusses their applicability to international relations. The second approach looks at those Confucian texts that explicitly talk of state-to-state relations, and analyses the behavioural modes expressed in them. The third and final approach sketches the Chinese world view based on a variety of Confucian texts and then projects this idealised world view into the practicalities of the modern world.

The first approach requires identifying and discussing the key concepts of Confucianism and their “true” character. This takes us into the realm of hermeneutics, and in the case of Confucian classics, even exegetics. It is important to understand that the central concepts and categories of Confucianism have undergone numerous semantic shifts. Furthermore, rival schools of rival philosophers have used the same concepts to advance very different ideas (Raphals 1992, 7). Any single concept, or Confucian virtue, can belong to several locutions. Additionally, the semantic uses are inconsistent over time and context (*ibid.*, 231).

The approach of using concepts from traditional schools of thought in order to explain the Chinese society—an approach that does not prevail merely in the field of international relations—has caused the writer and essayist Yu Qiuyu (2006) to remark in frustration:

³ Although Legalism is usually considered to be the opposite of Confucianism in the spectrum of Chinese traditional schools of thought, they share some common roots. For example, Han Fei, an important protagonist of Legalism, was deeply influenced by his teacher Xunzi, who was one of the best-known successors of Confucius. Later, in imperial China’s political system, Confucian and Legalist elements became intertwined.

In recent years, many officials and literati have indulged more and more in spouting strings of idioms, ancient sayings, descriptive words, and parallel sentences to describe Chinese culture and the Chinese spirit, and the proper connotation and denotation of many of these are hard to understand when they are translated into a foreign language... (translated citation from Martinsen 2006).

There are plenty of examples to be found. It is common for Chinese authors to state in English: “China’s cultural tradition emphasizes *he wei gui* 和為貴, ‘priority for peace’” (see e.g. Liu 2008). Although in modern Chinese, *he* conveys both peace (*heping* 和平) and concord (*hemu* 和睦), it cannot be translated as “peace” (i.e. the opposite of “war”) in the phrase *he wei gui*, at least according to its original appearance in the *Analects* (I.12), where it means “concord”, or according to Legge (1972, 143), “natural ease”. *Zhongyong* 中庸 is an ambiguous term which is usually translated as referring to moderation, equilibrium, or the golden mean. However, research has shown that the interpretations have varied from “using the centre” according to scholar Zheng Xuan (127–200) to “central and constant” according to Zhu Xi (Johnston and Wang 2012). Therefore, the real meaning of the concept—if such a thing can even be said to exist—is far from clear.

Values cannot be selected at will as if they were some sort of a smorgasbord. They are the product of a certain frame of reference and function only within its parameters. Therefore, it is meaningless to directly extrapolate ideals, such as harmony or *zhongyong*, into state-to-state relations. Thus the second approach may prove to be more fruitful in the quest of finding the roots of a Chinese IR theory. This means that one should limit oneself to those texts and excerpts that explicitly discuss state-to-state relations. Only then can it be discovered that Confucian texts advocate concordance among all peoples (*Book of History*, Yu Shu: Yao Dian 1), righteous war (*Da Dai Liji*, Yong bing 2), overlordship through non-military means (*Xunzi* IX.12), and benevolence instead of tyranny (*Analects* XVI.1 *et al*) (see Wang Y. 2011). As for Confucius himself, he stated that if a ruler was righteous, trustworthy and respected the rules of propriety, then even people from distant lands would flock to him (*Analects*, XIII.4). According to *Zhongyong* (21), Confucius advised the ruler to treat foreigners indulgently and to cherish the lesser princes under his command.

These remarks speak of the ruler’s soft power, which emerges as a by-product of his virtuousness towards his own subjects, the main tenet of Confucius’s teachings. To extrapolate those remarks which are predominantly

related to the state's internal affairs, such as calls for propriety and righteousness, into the realm of international relations, would be ahistorical. Nevertheless, this approach appears to be common (see e.g. Wang R. 2011, 47; Zhu 2013, 61).

The proponents of the third approach to identifying a Chinese IR theory aim to overcome the obstacles described above and discover whether there is something permanent which they could all agree upon. And perhaps there is. The traditional Chinese world view is neatly encapsulated in the following paragraph of *Daxue*:

The ancients who wished to illustrate illustrious virtue under Heaven, first ordered well their own states. Wishing to order well their states, they first regulated their families. Wishing to regulate their families, they first cultivated their persons. ... Their persons being cultivated, their families were regulated. Their families being regulated, their states were rightly governed. Their states being rightly governed, All-Under-Heaven became tranquil and happy. (*Liji*, *Daxue* 1, quoted in Legge 1972, 357–59)⁴

The central concept in this paragraph is *Tianxia* 天下. It can be directly translated as All-Under-Heaven, and it was the word used in the world known to the Chinese. It happened to be a world in which China had no contenders as a civilization, and thus *Tianxia*, the world and China were effectively the same. The Emperor was the Son of Heaven, and “under the wide heaven, there was no land that was not the king’s” (*Book of Poetry*, Xiaoya: Beishan 2).

Researcher Zhu Zhongbo (2013, 59–62) from the Chinese Institute of International Studies described how the “three guiding principles” (*san gang* 三綱⁵) listed in *Daxue*, i.e. cultivating one’s person, regulating one’s family, and ordering one’s state, embodied the ideal combination of “Inner Sageliness” (*neisheng* 內聖) and “Outer Kingliness” (*waiwang* 外王) in a way which made “all within the four seas lift up their heads, and looking at (the Sagely Ruler), wishing to have him for their sovereign” (*Mengzi*, Teng Wen Gong II.10, quoted in Legge 1972, 274).⁶ *Neisheng* refers to becoming sage-like in knowledge, wisdom and morals through self-cultivation, while *waiwang* refers to turning the enlightened state into

⁴ The translation was slightly modified by the author.

⁵ Confusingly, *san gang* used in other contexts may also refer to the “Three Cardinal Leads” of filiality, i.e. ruler leads subject, father leads son, husband leads wife.

⁶ The translation was slightly modified.

enlightened action in order to better the society like a sage king of yore. According to Zhu, in such a situation, the “barbarians” from the four compass points would submit themselves to the ruler “like the myriad of stars pay their respect to the Polestar” (*Analects* II.1).⁷ Zhu (2013, 62–64) further pointed out that both Confucius and Mencius promoted virtue over military skills as a means of overcoming one’s adversaries, which combined with the “three guiding principles”, formed a peaceful basis for China’s foreign policy tradition. However, Zhu also noted that this was not a pacifist tradition as righteous wars and violence aimed at ending chaos were considered acceptable.

As Professor Li Cunshan (2012, 15) from the Chinese Academy of Social Sciences remarked, late imperial era idealist thinkers (such as Kang Youwei (1858–1927) and Tan Sitong (1865–1898)) tried to establish a synthesis of the Chinese ideal of All-Under-Heaven with the realities of nation states. Perhaps most remarkably, the father of the republic, Sun Yat-sen (1866–1925; quoted in Li 2012, 15), said:

We must strengthen harmonious and friendly relations with friendly nations, uphold pacifism, increase China’s weight in the international community and work towards gradually realizing a “Universal Commonwealth” (*Datong* 大同) in the world.

Sun borrowed from Kang Youwei, who named his future utopia *Datong*, which he described as a time when national frontiers and classes will disappear and universal peace will prevail. Sun later explained that before moving towards internationalism, China should regain its position as a free and equal nation among nations (Li 2012, 16). This standpoint has since been subscribed to by all Chinese leaders.

Sun’s contemporary, Cai Yuanpei, recognized Sun’s ideas, known as the “Three Principles of the People” (*san min zhuyi*, 三民主义), as the epitome of the ancient Confucian ideal of *zhongyong*, understood as the golden mean (ibid., 16). Most famously, Sun adopted the saying *Tianxia wei gong* 天下為公, which is today most often understood as “All under Heaven is one” or “We all share a common world” as his slogan. Taken literally, this slogan means that everything under Heaven belongs to all (or: belongs together).

⁷ The quotation from the *Analects* is probably not a reference to the “barbarian” tribes, but rather to individual people.

Li Cunshan (2012) sees both Sun Yat-sen's pacifism and the epitome of China's modern foreign relations, the Five Principles of Peaceful Coexistence (which include the principle of non-interference in other countries' internal affairs), as parts in a continuum of the traditional Confucian principles. Similarly, the researcher Wang Hongxu (2011, 97) from the Central Party School noted that in 1955, the Premier Zhou Enlai (1898–1976) said:

There is an ancient saying in China (in the *Analects*, XII.2), "Do not do unto others what you do not wish to be done unto you". We are opposed to outside interference, so why would we interfere in the internal politics of other countries? (quoted in Wang H. 2011, 97).⁸

Wang Hongxu (2011, 98–100) and others (e.g. Yang 2011) explained how the Five Principles were an example of the unbreakable tradition of the search for "harmony" (*hehe* 和合) in Chinese politics. Harmony is often construed through an ancient phrase (from the *Analects* XIII.23) which extols the virtue of harmony over conformity (*he er bu tong* 和而不同). The Five Principles may be seen as an application of this phrase as they call for a peaceful coexistence and the recognition of the other countries' right to retain their individual characteristics. Ideally, this in turn facilitates the potentially fruitful exchanges even between ideological combatants.

While it is easy to translate *Tianxia*, it is harder to interpret it. As several Chinese scholars (see Peng 2013) were quick to point out, it is a common error to superimpose ancient ideals onto the modern world when talking about the concept of *Tianxia*, All-Under-Heaven. From today's perspective, it is easily understood as "the world" and, as such, transnational in character. Therefore, it is often claimed that Confucianism promotes internationalism. However, in reality *Tianxia* originally referred to the Chinese empire, which was seen as equal to the Chinese cultural sphere. The "states" (*guo* 國) in existence referred to the vassals, who were all governed by the Son of Heaven, the Emperor.

It can be argued that the "all under Heaven is one" ideal could become compatible with the modern, Westphalian system only if one abandoned the principle of the Emperor at the centre. Some Chinese thinkers, for

⁸ However, it would be incorrect to claim that Confucianism is against all kinds of interference in other countries' affairs. Professor Wang Zhongjiang from Peking University remarked that Mencius was in favour of humanitarian interventions (Peng 2013, 93).

instance Yan Xuetong (2006; 2011, 39–64), have tried to overcome this by emphasising the differentiation between a “true”, benevolent king (or emperor) and a hegemonic king. In classical texts, the former are said to follow the “Kingly Way”, *wangdao* 王道, while the latter follow the “Hegemonic Way”, *badao* 霸道. The ensuing logic is that a unified *Tianxia* system need not be a hegemonic one.

In Chinese texts, the ideal and just rule, known as *wangdao*, is presented as the opposite of *badao*, which is often translated as “hegemony”, although it also carries the implications of tyranny.⁹ Li Cunshan (2012, 13) remarked that the benevolence and morality of a “true king” was a kind of a soft power, at which he quoted the ancient thinker Dong Zhongshu (179–104 BCE):

A (true) king exerts his caring even to the barbarians of the four compass points, whereas a (tyrannical) hegemon only exerts his caring to the vassal lords under him (*Chunqiu Fanlu*, Ren yi fa 1).

Li noted that Wang Chong, who lived more than a century after Dong, balanced soft and hard power by noting that morality was not enough to rule a country, just as strength was not enough to subjugate the enemy.¹⁰

However, although tyrants were condemned as hegemons, there was no thought of equal state-to-state relations. In the *Tianxia* system it is impossible to entirely abandon the need for a centre. Li Cunshan (2012, 14) reminded readers that historically, the system was supposed to consist of vassals under the suzerain. Under Heaven there could be but one ruler, albeit preferably a benevolent one. Even during the last imperial dynasty, the Qing, the nations beyond direct imperial control were still considered vassals or tributary states, if not outright barbarians. This system came to

⁹ Interestingly, the academic Fu Sinian (1896–1950) remarked that Confucius favoured hegemonism in international relations, whereas Mencius (fourth century BCE), one of the best-known successors of Confucius, stood for the Kingly Way (Wang R. 2011, 47). Fu seemingly based his assessment on a pair of verses in the *Analecets* (XIV.16–17) in which Confucius expressed his appreciation for the unification policies of Duke Huan of Qi (ruled 685–643 BCE) and his Prime Minister, Guan Zhong. Duke Huan was known as one of the five hegemons of the Spring and Autumn Era (770–476 BCE), i.e. one of the rulers with sufficient power to act as a regent and protector of the Zhou King, thus manifesting the unity of the Zhou dynasty (ca. 1045–221 BCE), which had become merely symbolic with the strengthening of the feudal states.

¹⁰ The quote of Dong Zhongshu can be found in *Chunqiu Fanlu*, Ren yi fa 1. The quote of Wang Chong can be found in *Lunheng*, Fei Han 10.

an end during the colonial era, when China woke up to the reality of multiple competing powers. Furthermore, as noted by numerous scholars, the Kingly Way is also a hegemony of sorts (see Peng 2013). How else would “those who are far off [become] attracted” (*Analects* XIII.16, quoted in Legge 1972, 269) and acknowledge the superiority of the benevolent king? It might not be hegemony through force, but rather akin to soft power, but it is hegemony nonetheless.

Xi Jinping’s “Rule by Virtue”

Professor Ye Zicheng (2013) from the Peking University coined the term *Huaxia zhuyi* 華夏主義 (“Chinese-ism”, *Huaxia* refers to the Chinese cultural sphere) which refers to a combination of traditional schools of thought which he believes should form the basis of government in China. He suggested that China should endorse the Taoist “natural” way of government, the Confucian “people-centred” government, and the Legalist “law-based” government. Furthermore, Ye (2014) believes that Xi Jinping is already putting such a combination into force.

According to Ye Zicheng (2014), Xi Jinping applied his knowledge of the tradition to the five fields of governance. With regard to (1) “building an ecological civilization” Xi is relying on Taoist values, which—according to Ye—promote sustainable development and harmony between nature and man. Xi also referred to Taoist texts when he talked about (2) the relationship between market forces and the government. Ye considered the Taoist principle of *wuwei* 無為, letting things happen in an unforced way, as the core of Xi’s domestic economic policies. With regard to (3) the treatment of people, Xi has often quoted the Confucian principle of *yi min wei ben* 以民為本, “making the people the basis” of all government policies.

In light of the Party’s previously mentioned goal to rule the country by integrating law and virtue, the two remaining fields identified by Ye Zicheng warrant closer scrutiny. They are related to (4) China’s legal framework and (5) foreign relations. The Fourth Plenum of the 18th Central Committee of the Communist Party stressed the need to develop *fazhi* 法治, which has been translated as “the rule of law” in the Chinese media. *Fazhi* is often used synonymously with *yi fa zhi guo* 依法治國—the standard translation for the rule of law—which is misleading. In actual fact, *fazhi* is the opposite of *renzhi* 人治, “the rule of man”. When writing on the Fourth Plenum the *Global Times* (2014b) wrote: “China was stubbornly influenced by thousands of years of ‘the rule of man’, and the

remnants are still impacting modern ruling mechanisms". Today, *renzhi* refers not only to the emperor's rule in history, but also to the kind of unlimited power that Mao Zedong and Deng Xiaoping were still able to wield before the Party started promoting collective rule and inner-Party democracy.

Furthermore, the Constitution of the People's Republic (Article 1) stipulates that China "is a socialist state under the people's democratic dictatorship led by the working class". This is something quite different from constitutionalism. In China, the rule of law (*yi fa zhi guo*) is always presented as "the socialist rule of law with Chinese characteristics": a system that does not rest on the same principles as the "Western" rule of law.¹¹ On the eve of the Fourth Plenum, the *Global Times* (2014a) declared that "China must chart its own course to the rule of law". The Communiqué of the Plenum states:

The leadership of the Party and the Socialist rule of law are identical, the Socialist rule of law must persist in the leadership of the Party, the leadership of the Party must rely on the Socialist rule of law (Xinhuaawang 2014).

Therefore, when the Party says it wants to promote *fazhi* in China, it is simply referring to a collective government supported by a solid legal system.¹²

Xi Jinping's personal take on governance supported by laws seems to be based on a Legalist School's understanding of society. The Legalist School, which promoted punishments and rewards as the most effective way of keeping subjects in hand, was favoured by the founder of the Qin Dynasty, who found the ideas useful in forming the first unified empire in China in 221 BCE. Ye Zicheng (2014) noted that in 2006 Xi quoted Shang Yang, a Legalist scholar and statesman who lived a century before the Qin Dynasty: "All states have laws but there is no law that forces the people to

¹¹ *Yi fa zhi guo*, literally "to rule the country according to law", was previously written homonymically as 以法治國, literally "utilising law to rule the country", which is in reality a synonym for *fazhi*, rule by law.

¹² *Hongqi Wengao*, a Party-run theoretical magazine, published an article in October, 2014 accusing the promoters of the constitutional rule of renouncing the class struggle. The article warned of replacing the people's democratic dictatorship with the rule of law, stating that this would be falling into the trap of "universal values", and would play into the hands of international capital but be detrimental to the Chinese people (QStheory.cn 2014).

obey them". This means that laws alone are not sufficient for they need to be guided by a higher principle or actor. As Shang Yang wrote, the disorder in a country is not the fault of the laws being in disorder, it is just that the laws are inadequate in general.¹³

In the imperial era that followed the Qin Dynasty, the harsh teachings of Legalism were abandoned in favour of the more humane Confucianism as the state ideology. However, due to their practical value rulers still relied on the principles of Legalism. Thus it has been said that the imperial rule was "Legalism under the guise of Confucianism". Following a similar logic, Xi Jinping's idea of *fazhi* could be dubbed "Legalism in the guise of the Rule of Law".

Xi's foreign relations have recently been epitomized in the idea of "a correct handling of justice and interests". In Chinese, "justice" and "interests" are *yi* 義 and *li* 利, respectively. *Li* can also be translated as "benefits" or "profit". This idea has been put forward in many authoritative articles, as well as in a book published by the State Council Information Office in 2014 (Guowuyuan Xinwen Bangongshi 2014). As early as 2006, Wang Shengcai from the State Administration of Religious Affairs discussed the difference between Western realism and Confucianism in international relations (from the viewpoint of these two traditional concepts). In line with Yan Xuetong, Wang stated that realism equals the Hegemonic Way, whereas Confucianism, which preaches the Kingly Way, has similarities with the idealistic school of International Relations. In Confucianism, justice, albeit remote, must come first and benefits, even if immediate, must take second place. One does not need to disregard one's own interests, but one must not pursue them through unjust means (Wang 2006).

Wang Shengcai (2006) further claimed that the Chinese foreign policy decision-making put equal emphasis on justice and interests, and emphasized justice more than other countries. China's peaceful rise will only be possible if cooperation in the Asia-Pacific region is established, which will only happen if other countries place justice and the common good before their own interests. He concluded by stating that tradition should not lead people astray: aiming for global justice must not lead to the neglect of one's national interests.

According to the Foreign Minister Wang Yi's article in the aforementioned book by the State Council Information Office, achieving a proper balance between justice and interests has always been of key

¹³ The original text can be found in *Shangjun shu*, Huace 3.

importance in the Chinese tradition (Wang 2014, 27). From the point of view of Confucianism, this is not exactly true. On the contrary, Confucianism has always stressed justice and disregarded one's own interests or benefits. According to Confucius, when one is offered benefits, one must consider whether they are justified or not (*Analects* XIV.12). One must seek justice and reject material benefit or fame. Confucius also said: "Riches and honours are what men desire. If they cannot be obtained in the proper way, they should not be held." (*Analects* IV.5, quoted in Legge 1972, 166) This was the ideological reason for the Confucian disdain for trade and tradesmen, who were seen as aiming to maximise their own profit at the expense of others.

In later Confucianism the stances softened somewhat. During the Ming Dynasty, attitudes towards tradesmen became more favourable among certain Confucian scholars, for instance Wang Yangming (1472–1528), who stated that scholars, farmers, craftsmen and tradesmen all contributed equally to the wellbeing of the state (Yu 1987, 525). Seeking benefits became acceptable as long as one prioritized justice. Ye Zicheng (2014) noted that Xunzi, one of the most influential followers of Confucius, remarked that men desire both benefits and justice. Xunzi concluded that those who allow their desire for justice to overcome their desire for benefits are fit to rule the empire, whereas those who are unable to restrain their desire for benefits through their sense of justice (*yi yi zhi li* 以義制利) become subjects to be ruled (*Xunzi*, Dalüe 61, and Zhenglun 19).¹⁴ A few centuries later, Dong Zhongshu said that benefit is a form of material nourishment, while justice is a form of spiritual nourishment; thus both are necessary. But even he concluded that society could survive poverty, but not the lack of justice (*Chunqiu Fanlu*, Shen zhi yang zhong yu yi 1).

It is hard to draw any other conclusion than to say that, ultimately, Confucianism stands against seeking personal benefits. For a Confucian, the justification for his actions derives from his righteousness. Therefore, according to the Confucian tradition, justice comes before benefits or one's own interests. In this regard, Ye Zicheng's (2014) claim as regards the key trend in Chinese tradition is untenable.

¹⁴ In many articles (see e.g. Chen 2013) *yi yi zhi li* is mistakenly represented as *yi li zhi yi* 以利制義, and interpreted as "using material means to promote justice", apparently in an effort to prove that *yi* and *li* need not be opposites. This is probably a modern formulation and interpretation which seems to bear no relevance to ancient texts.

Naturally, it is correct to argue, even in the light of Confucian classics, that pursuing one's interests cannot be disregarded entirely, as improving material conditions is beneficial for societal justice. As a state actor, China also has its core interests (whatever they may be), and cannot sacrifice them for the sake of abstract justice. On the other hand, China wants to be seen as a country fighting for greater justice in the international arena. Benefits and justice have to be balanced in the contemporary world. It is understandable that Chinese tradition needs to be interpreted accordingly, as ahistorical as this may be.

In regard to justice, one further observation is called for. The concept which I have translated above as justice, *yi*, originally covered a wide range of meanings. In ancient texts, *yi* is often explained through its homonym 宜, which refers to what is appropriate: when man does what he ought to do, that is right. This is reflected in Ye Zicheng's (2014) argument that what is right for China is the appropriate and timely course of action in any given situation. Thus the balance between *yi* and *li* means that China should neither act blindly in accordance with some abstract principles, nor concentrate on its own profit or external fame. While Xi Jinping said that China had a duty of helping poorer countries, China will act in accordance with the circumstances and its own resources, and seek mutual benefit, concluded Ye. All in all, the correct handling of justice and benefits translates into a pragmatic, utilitarian foreign policy. From China's traditional point of view, this could perhaps be dubbed as "opportunism under the guise of Confucianism".

The Confucian Response

In conclusion, outlining a Confucian narrative of international affairs with clearly identifiable variables and a consistent logic seems to be a futile task. Similarly, labelling certain ideas, concepts or categories as "Confucian" does not always withstand closer scrutiny. However, it would be hasty and unjust to infer that Confucianism has nothing to contribute to the global discourses. There is an element in Confucianism which encompasses the kind of relevance and originality which indeed has the potential to be conducive to improving our societies. This is the image of All-under-Heaven combined with the ideal of a decentralized rule.

Similar to the prominent political theorist Wu Jiaxiang (2013), I argue that according to early Confucian thinkers Sun Yat-sen's slogan, *Tianxia wei gong*, represented the ideal for society. We just need to read the slogan in its original meaning: "All under Heaven belongs to all" (in Legge's

translation, “a public and common spirit ruled all under the sky”; see CText.org, *Liji*, *Liyun* 1). This phrase originates from the text “*Liyun*” 禮運 (“Conveying and Using the Rites”) in the ancient *Book of Rites*, where it is mentioned as a feature of the past golden age, *Datong*. This is where Kang Youwei got the name for his utopia. However, it is often overlooked that the original golden age of *Datong* was not the same as Kang Youwei’s future utopia. In “*Liyun*”, *Datong* is more precisely translated as “Perfect Communitarity” rather than “Universal Commonwealth”. According to “*Liyun*”, *Tianxia wei gong* was the opposite of everything belonging to the ruling families, including the right to succession. Wu wrote that the core of the ideal lies within the principle that the throne is not the monopoly of any given clan but should be bequeathed to the most able (Wu 2013, 112, 335).

In his book that promotes “polycentric governance” in China, Wu Jiayang (2013, 1–164) argued that the Confucian project was to attempt to make room for the functions of the *Tianxia wei gong* ideal within a system that essentially operated under the premise that everything belongs to the ruling families. These functions would have included the idea of succession by the able as well as “divided enfeoffment” or decentralized rule (called *fengjian* 封建 in Chinese and often translated as “feudal system” because the term referred to a system of semi-autonomous duchies under the overlordship of the Son of Heaven, forming a nominally unified empire).

The idea of decentralized rule was further promoted and developed by later Confucian thinkers, such as Gu Yanwu (1613–1682). He was dissatisfied with the prevailing centralized rule system (*junxian* 郡縣), and asserted that “implanting” the idea of the *fengjian* system into the imperial system of government would help the empire to rid itself of the drawbacks and excesses of centralized power (Gu cited in Liu 2000, 24–25). He wrote:

Today, the centralization of power has been taken to excess ... Therefore, the lives of people worsen by the day, the Central Kingdom weakens by the day, and general unrest ensues. Why has it come to this? The difficulty of the decentralized rule (*fengjian*) was in centralizing power down, and the difficulty of the centralized rule is in centralizing power up. The ancient Sagely Rulers took care of their people in a communal way and divided their land into fiefdoms. Today, the masters of men consider all land within the Four Seas as their own, and even that is not enough for them. They treat every man with suspicion and wish to regulate every

single matter. Laws and regulations grow more numerous by the day (from the essay “Junxianlun” 1, quoted in Liu 2000, 24–25).

Other late imperial-era thinkers, such as Huang Zongxi (1610–95) and Zeng Jing (1679–1736), shared Gu Yanwu’s views. Zeng Jing explained *fengjian* in a way that sounds similar to the subsidiarity principle in the European Union. His ideal had links to the equal field system “from the days when there was less central power ...” (Spence 2001, 75). Gu wrote:

The vastness of the world is such that one person’s eyes or mind cannot grasp it all ... The sage presided over the worthies, as the most important matters took precedence over the lesser. Thus, a balance was reached: day-to-day business was managed by the worthies, but there was still one person who decided on overall policy. Such was the system of ‘divided enfeoffment’ (*fengjian*) set up by the rulers in ancient days. Though the Son of Heaven presided ..., the job of nurturing the people and the responsibility for governing them devolved on the enfeoffed rulers of each smaller region (translated and quoted in Spence 2001, 166).

Several present-day scholars have compared the societal ideals of Confucianism to communitarianism (see e.g. Fox 1997). Communitarianism seeks to promote the needs of the community and places itself against the interest politics. Sungmoon Kim (2014, 5–6, 12–14) condemned the fact that the advocates of the “communitarian thesis” promoted replacing “Western” democracy based on individual rights by Confucian, role-ethics-based democracy. While they believe that a Confucian social self is symbiotic with the community and that ritual aestheticism (“propriety”, *li* 禮) can function as an alternative to the rule of law, they fail to answer the all-important question: who gets to judge what does harmony mean? Kim (2014, 8) claimed that the communitarians¹⁵ “leave out democracy in toto” when they failed to offer any viable alternatives to the Western model they criticize.

I would argue that it would be more fruitful to compare Confucianism to communalism rather than communitarianism. As a theory of government, communalism refers to a federation of autonomous communes. It may also be seen as a call for a moral economy that would harmonise human communities with the natural world (Bookchin 2005, 85–87). Indeed, the previously outlined ancient Confucian ideal resembles today’s calls for decentralization, regional autonomy, and grass-roots

¹⁵ Kim (2014, 8 fn. 18) referred to sinologists David L. Hall and Roger Ames in particular.

democracy, as well as those criticizing nepotism, corruption and plutocracy. Such calls can be heard from all parts of the world, China and Europe alike. Therefore, there is a niche for combining Confucianism with communalism.

It has been said that since revolutions ended the position of Confucianism as China's main ideology at the turn of the last century, it has been a wandering soul without a body (Yu 1998, 229). By joining hands with the communalist movements, the Confucian soul might find a new home. A form of "Confucian communalism" would not challenge the prevailing liberal world order, but would rather fill in some of its gaps. It could also become an example of a true amalgamation of elements from both Chinese and "Western" cultures. In China, it could make democracy a part of the Confucian narrative in a manner that would not constitute an immediate threat to the Party-state. In sum, this means that while Confucianism may not be of major relevance for international relations, it could, as a societal movement, play a significant role in the modern world.

Bibliography

- Ames, Roger T. 2011. *Confucian Role Ethics: A Vocabulary*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press.
- Bookchin, Murray. 2005. *The Ecology of Freedom: The Emergence and Dissolution of Hierarchy*. Oakland: AK Press.
- Chen, Xiuping 陈秀平. 2013. "Rujia de 'yi-liguan' jiqi dangdai jiazhi 儒家的'义利观'及其当代价值." *Qiushi Lilun Wang* November 8. Accessed December 10, 2014. http://www.qstheory.cn/zl/bkxj/201311/t20131108_288633.htm.
- China Copyright and Media. 2014. "Official Central Committee Communiqué On 4th Plenum". Accessed October 24, 2014. <http://china.copyrightandmedia.wordpress.com/2014/10/23/official.central-committee-communicue-on-4th-plenum/>.
- Chinese Text Project*. Accessed October 24, 2014. www.ctext.org.
- Economy, Elizabeth C. 2014. "China's Imperial President. Xi Jinping Tightens His Grip." *Foreign Affairs* 93 (6) (November/December): 80–91.
- Ford, Christopher A. 2014. "Confucian Rationalizations for One-Party Dictatorship". Remarks on 9 May, 2014 at a conference on "Rethinking the Chinese World Order; Historical Perspectives on the Rise of China" at the University of Denver. Published by New

- Paradigms Forum. Accessed May 20, 2014. <http://www.newparadigmsforum.com/NPFtestsite/?p=1835>.
- Fox, Russell A. 1997. "Confucian and Communitarian Responses to Liberal Democracy." *The Review of Politics* 59 (3): 561–92.
- Global Times. 2014a. "China Must Chart Own Course to Rule of Law." *Global Times* October 21. Accessed October 21, 2014. <http://www.globaltimes.cn/content/887350.shtml>.
- Global Times. 2014b. "'Rule of Man' Tradition Changed by New Law Blueprint." *Global Times* October 30, 2014. Accessed November 19, 2014. <http://www.globaltimes.cn/content/889069.shtml>.
- Godement, François. 2013. *Divided Asia: The Implications for Europe. Policy Brief of the European Council on Foreign Relations*. London: European Council on Foreign Relations. Accessed November 19, 2014. http://www.ecfr.eu/page/-/ECFR91_DIVIDED_ASIA_AW.pdf.
- Guowuyuan Xinwen Bangongshi 国务院新闻办公室, ed. 2014. *Jiedu Zhongguo Waijiao Xin Lilun* 解读中国外交新理念. Beijing: Wuzhou Chuanbo Chubanshe.
- Johnston, Ian and Ping Wang, transl. and ed. 2012. *Daxue & Zhongyong. Bilingual Edition*. Hong Kong: Hong Kong University Press.
- Kallio, Jyrki. 2011. *Tradition in Chinese Politics. The Party-state's reinvention of the past and the critical response from public intellectuals*. FIIA Report 27. Helsinki: The Finnish Institute of International Affairs. Accessed March 2, 2014. http://www.fiaa.fi/fi/publication/165/tradition_in_chinese_politics/.
- Kang, Xiaoguang 康晓光. 2014. "Da zhuangui-quanqiu hua shidai de guojia zhuangui lilun ji Zhonghua minzu fuxing zhanlue" 大转轨—大转轨—全球化时代的国家转轨理论及中华民族复兴战略. *Zhongguo Renmin Daxue Feiyingshi Zuzhi Yanjiusuo* April 30, 2014. Accessed 16 October, 2014. <http://npo.ruc.edu.cn/displaynews.php?id=464>.
- Kim, Sungmoon. 2014. *Confucian Democracy in East Asia, Theory and Practise*. New York: Cambridge University Press.
- Li, Fawei 李发伟. 2011. "Rujia xin-xing lilun dui chuantong Zhongguo duiwai guanxi de yingxiang" 儒家心性理论对传统中国对外关系的影响. *Ningxia Shehui Kexue* 3: 120–23.
- Li, Cunshan 李存山. 2012. "Zhong-shu zhi Dao yu Zhongguo jin-xiandai de duiwai guanxi 忠恕之道与中国近现代的对外关系." *Zhongguo Shehui Kexueyuan Yanjiushengyuan Xuebao* 5 (191) (September): 11–18.
- Liu, Guoli. 2008. "Domestic Sources of China's Emerging Grand Strategy." *Journal of Asian and African Studies* 1, 43 (5): 543–61.

- Liu, Jiuzhou 劉九洲, ed. 2000. *Xin yi Gu Tinglin wenji* 新譯顧亭林文集. Taibei: Sanmin Shuju.
- Liu, Xiaoying 刘晓英. 2012. "Shiyong lixing: Yingxiang Zhongguo jueqi de neizai wenhua yinsu 实用理性: 影响中国崛起的内在文化因." *Guoji Guanxi Xueyuan Xuebao* (Beijing) 3: 108–15.
- Martinsen, Joel. 2006. "Yu Qiuyu on cross-cultural communication". *Danwei.org* October 28. Accessed March 31, 2013. http://www.danwei.org/china_and_foreign_relations/yu_qiuyu_on_crosscultural_comm.php.
- Peng, Yongjie 彭永捷. 2013. "Wangdao zhengzhi yu Tianxia zhuyi 王道政治与天下主义." *Xiandai Zhexue* 127 (2) (March): 90–102.
- QStheory.cn. 2014. "Yi fa zhi guo yu jianchi renmin minzhu zhuanzheng" 依法治国与坚持人民民主专政." *QStheory.cn*. October 1. Accessed November 19, 2014. http://www.qstheory.cn/dukan/hqwgf/2014-10/11/c_1112780248.htm.
- Raphals, Lisa. 1992. *Knowing Words, Wisdom and Cunning in the Classical Traditions of China and Greece*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press.
- Schuman, Michael. 2014. "The Chinese President's Love Affair with Confucius Could Backfire on Him." *Time.com* October 30. Accessed November 19, 2014. <http://time.com/3547467/china-beijing-xi-jinping-confucius-communism/>.
- Spence, Jonathan D. 2001. *Treason by the Book*. New York, NY: Penguin Books.
- Song, Qiang 宋強, Zhang Zangzang 長藏藏, and Qiao Bian 喬邊. 1997. *Erlingsanling Zhongguo diyi* 二零三零中國第一. Hong Kong: Mingbao Chubanshe.
- Wang, Hongxu 王红续. 2011. "Hexie shijie linian de Zhonghua chuantong wenhua jichu 和谐世界理念的中华传统文化基础." *Zhong-Gong Zhongyang Dangxiao Xuebao* 15 (1) (February): 96–100.
- Wang, Rihua 王日华. 2011. "Kongzi zhuyi guoji guanxi lilun yu Zhongguo waijiao 孔子主义国际关系理论与中国外交." *Xiandai Guoji Guanxi* 5: 47–54.
- Wang, Shengcai 王生才. 2006. "Rujia yi-liguan de xiandai jiedu jiqi dui Zhongguo waijiao juece de yingxiang 儒家义利观的现代解读及其对中国外交决策的影响." *Xibei Di'er Minzu Xueyuan Xuebao* 2 (70): 24–28.

- Wang, Yi 王易. 2011. "Rujia guojia guanxi lilun sixiang de xiandai jiazhi yu lishi shiming 儒家国家关系伦理思想的现代价值与历史使命." *Chuangxin* 5 (31): 8–13.
- . 2014. "Jianchi zhengque yi-liguan, jiji fahui fuzeren daguo zuoyong 坚持正确义利观, 积极发挥负责任大国作用." In *Jiedu Zhongguo Waijiao Xin Lilun* 解读中国外交新理念, edited by Guowuyuan Xinwen Bangongshi 国务院新闻办公室, 27–33. Beijing: Wuzhou Chuanbo Chubanshe.
- Wu, Jiexiang 吴稼祥. 2013. *Gong Tianxia – Duo zhongxin zhili yu shuang zhuti faquan* 公天下—多中心治理与双主体法权. Nanning: Guangxi Shifan Daxue Chubanshe.
- Xi, Jinping. 2014. *The Governance of China*. Beijing: Foreign Languages Press.
- Xinhuaawang 新华网. 2014. "Shouquan fabu: Zhongguo Gongchandang dishibajie Zhongyang Weiyuanhui disici quanti huiyi gongbao" 授权发布: 中国共产党第十八届中央委员会第四次全体会议公报 October 23. Accessed October 24, 2014. http://news.xinhuanet.com/politics/2014-10/23/c_1112953884.htm.
- Yan, Xuetong. 2006. "The Rise of China and its Power Status." *The Chinese Journal of International Politics* 1: 5–33.
- . 2011. *Ancient Chinese Thought, Modern Chinese Power*, edited by Daniel A. Bell and Sun Zhe; translated by Edmund Ryden. Princeton: Princeton University Press.
- Yang, Meng 杨萌. 2011. "'He er bu tong' yu heping gongchu wu xiang yuanze 和而不同"与和平共处五项原则." *Hongqi Wengao* 2: 34–35.
- Ye, Zicheng 叶自成. 2013. "Huaxia zhuyi: Zhongguo de bentu renwen jingshen 华夏主义: 中国的本土人文精神." *Xueshu Qianyan* 2: 64–83.
- . 2014. "Chuantong wenhua jinghua yu Xi Jinping zhiguo linian" 传统文化精华与习近平治国理念." *Renmin Luntan* February 7. Accessed December 9, 2014. <http://theory.people.com.cn/n/2014/0207/c112851-24291830.html>.
- Yu, Qiuyu 余秋雨. 2006. "Zhongguo chuyu 'wenhua guli' zhi zhong ma? 中国处于“文化孤立”之中吗? ." *Huanqiu Shibao* October 9, reprinted at *Renminwang* October 11. Accessed March 31, 2013. <http://culture.people.com.cn/GB/27296/4903226.html>.
- Yu, Yingshi 余英时. 1987. *Shi yu Zhongguo wenhua* 士与中国文化. Shanghai: Shanghai Renmin Chubanshe.

- . 1998. *Xiandai ruxue de kunjing* 现代儒学的困境. Shanghai: Shanghai Renmin Chubanshe.
- Zhu, Zhongbo 朱中博. 2013. "Rujia de da zhanlüe sixiang daoxiang jiqi liang mian 儒家的大战略思想导向及其两面." *Guoji GuanCha* 1: 59–65.
- Zhuang, Pinghui. 2014. "Party Mouthpiece Compares Xi with Deng as the 'New Architect of Reform'." *South China Morning Post* November 14. Accessed November 19, 2014. <http://www.scmp.com/news/china/article/1639250/party-mouthpiece-compares-xi-deng-new-architect-reform>.